



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



LIBRARY  
UNIVERSITY OF  
CALIFORNIA  
SANTA CRUZ



250  
To Professor William A. Nitze  
in token of admiration and  
esteem.

Nov. 1, '21. W. A. Beardsley.



**Columbia University**  
**STUDIES IN ROMANCE PHILOLOGY AND**  
**LITERATURE**

**INFINITIVE CONSTRUCTIONS**  
**IN OLD SPANISH**

**COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY PRESS  
SALES AGENTS**

---

**NEW YORK  
LEMCKE & BUECHNER  
30-32 EAST 20TH STREET**

**LONDON  
HUMPHREY MILFORD  
AMEN CORNER, E.C.**

**SHANGHAI  
EDWARD EVANS & SONS, LTD.  
30 NORTH SZECHUEN ROAD**

# INFINITIVE CONSTRUCTIONS IN OLD SPANISH

BY  
WILFRED A. BEARDSLEY, PH.D.



**New York**  
COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY PRESS  
1921

*All rights reserved*



Copyright, 1921  
BY COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY PRESS

---

Printed from type March, 1921

THE PLIMPTON PRESS • NORWOOD • MASS • U • S • A

PC  
4715  
B38

**TO MY MOTHER**



# CONTENTS

## PART I

### THE PURE INFINITIVE

	PAGE
THE PURE INFINITIVE AS SUBSTANTIVE.....	1
The Infinitive as Substantive Unmodified or with the Article only.....	3
The Infinitive as Substantive in Plural.....	5
The Infinitive as Substantive Variously Modified.....	7
The Infinitive as Substantive with Subjective Genitive.....	10
The Infinitive as Substantive with Objective Genitive.....	11
The Infinitive as Substantive with Object.....	12
THE VERBAL PURE INFINITIVE.....	13
<i>The Pure Infinitive as Subject</i> .....	14
As Subject with <i>ser</i> and Adjective.....	15
As Subject with <i>ser</i> and Substantive.....	16
As Subject with the Impersonal Verbs.....	17
<i>The Infinitive as Predicate Noun</i> .....	20
<i>The Pure Infinitive as Object</i> .....	21
The Modal Auxiliaries.....	21
The Pure Infinitive with Verbs of Wishing and Liking.....	42
The Pure Infinitive with Verbs of the Mental Processes.....	44
Other Verbs with Pure Infinitive Object.....	50
The Pure Infinitive as Object of <i>fazer</i> , <i>dexar</i> and <i>mandar</i> .....	55
The Pure Infinitive with Verbs of Sense Perception.....	69
The Pure Infinitive with Verbs of Permitting and Forbidding..	73
<i>The Pure Infinitive with Verbs of Motion</i> .....	74
<i>The Independent Pure Infinitive</i> .....	84
<i>The Pure Infinitive Dependent on Relative Particles, etc.</i> .....	86
The Infinitive Depending on the Relative and Interrogative Pronouns.....	86
Relative and Interrogative Particles Other than <i>que</i> .....	91
Relative and Interrogative Adjectives with Substantive and Infinitive.....	93
The Comparative <i>que</i> with Infinitive.....	93

## PART II

## THE PREPOSITIONAL INFINITIVE

<i>The Infinitive with de</i> .....	97
The <i>de</i> -Infinitive as Subject with <i>ser</i> and Adjective.....	99
The <i>de</i> -Infinitive as Subject with <i>ser</i> and Substantive.....	100
The <i>de</i> -Infinitive as Subject with the Impersonal Verbs.....	101
The <i>de</i> -Infinitive as Predicate Noun.....	105
The <i>de</i> -Infinitive Object and the Relative <i>de</i> .....	106
The <i>de</i> -Infinitive as Object of Verb Locutions.....	124
The <i>de</i> -Infinitive with <i>lexar</i> , <i>prometer</i> , etc.....	129
The <i>de</i> -Infinitive Indicating Cause.....	131
The <i>de</i> -Infinitive Indicating Separation.....	133
The <i>de</i> -Infinitive Indicating Means.....	136
The <i>de</i> -Infinitive with Substantives.....	137
The <i>de</i> -Infinitive with Adjectives.....	143
<i>The Infinitive with a</i> .....	150
The <i>a</i> -Infinitive as Subject.....	153
The <i>a</i> -Infinitive as Object.....	153
The <i>a</i> -Infinitive with Intransitive Verbs of Motion.....	159
The <i>a</i> -Infinitive with Reflexive Verbs.....	168
The <i>a</i> -Infinitive with Transitive Verbs.....	174
The <i>a</i> -Infinitive with <i>auer</i> and <i>ser</i> .....	179
<i>The Infinitive with por</i> .....	192
The <i>por</i> -Infinitive with Substantives.....	193
The <i>por</i> -Infinitive with Adjectives.....	194
The <i>por</i> -Infinitive as Object.....	199
The <i>por</i> -Infinitive with Transitive Verbs (Object Present).....	201
The <i>por</i> -Infinitive with Intransitive Verbs of Motion.....	203
The <i>por</i> -Infinitive with Reflexive Verbs.....	207
The <i>por</i> -Infinitive Depends on a Clause.....	209
The <i>por</i> -Infinitive Indicates Futurity.....	211
The Independent <i>por</i> -Infinitive.....	214
The <i>por</i> -Infinitive Indicates Cause.....	216
The <i>por</i> -Infinitive Indicates Means.....	219
The <i>por</i> -Infinitive Indicates Concession.....	219
<i>The Infinitive with pora</i> .....	220
The <i>pora</i> -Infinitive with Substantives.....	221
The <i>pora</i> -Infinitive with Adjectives.....	222
The <i>pora</i> -Infinitive with Intransitive Verbs of Motion.....	225
The <i>pora</i> -Infinitive with Reflexive Verbs.....	228
The <i>pora</i> -Infinitive with Transitive Verbs.....	230

## CONTENTS

ix

The <i>pora</i> -Infinitive with <i>auer</i> and <i>ser</i> .....	231
The <i>pora</i> -Infinitive Depends on a Clause.....	233
<i>The Infinitive with para</i> .....	234
The <i>para</i> -Infinitive with Adjectives.....	235
The <i>para</i> -Infinitive with Intransitive Verbs of Motion.....	236
The <i>para</i> -Infinitive with Reflexive Verbs.....	236
The <i>para</i> -Infinitive with Transitive Verbs.....	237
<i>The Infinitive with en</i> .....	238
The <i>en</i> -Infinitive with Adjectives.....	239
The <i>en</i> -Infinitive with <i>meter</i> and <i>poner</i> .....	242
Verbs without Object taking the <i>en</i> -Infinitive.....	243
The <i>en</i> -Infinitive with Reflexive Verbs.....	247
<i>The Infinitive with Other Prepositions</i> .....	249

## PART III

### SPECIAL CONSTRUCTIONS

<i>The Infinitive with Subject</i> .....	256
<i>The Infinitive in Apposition with a Noun or Pronoun</i> .....	261



## INTRODUCTION

When the study of the infinitive and its attendant locutions suggested itself as a desirable contribution to the understanding of Spanish syntax, the subject was first thought of with especial reference to the present-day forms of speech. A little application and reflection, however, was sufficient to establish the importance of laying a sure foundation on the testimony of the earliest literary documents. In the course of time it has come about that the present volume is at last submitted to scholars in the modest hope that it may serve not only as a systematic record of the facts in the case, but also and especially as an aid in the comprehension of modern phenomena in the light of their origin and historical relations.

Two distinct methods of treating the available material are well illustrated by the two earlier outstanding studies of a similar nature: by Richard Otto's *Der portugiesische Infinitiv bei Camões* and R. Dittes's *Über den Gebrauch des Infinitivs im Altprovençalischen*, to be found respectively in volumes 6 and 15 of *Romanische Forschungen*. Otto coördinates his material in chapters on the *pure infinitive*, the *infinitive with á*, the *infinitive with de*, etc., completing, as he advances, under the caption of the various prepositions, each successive division of his entire subject. Dittes, on the other hand, considers of prime interest the grammatical category to which each of the infinitive constructions belongs, e.g., the *infinitive as subject*, the *infinitive as object*, etc. Each of these two methods has its obvious advantages, the first chiefly in that it emphasizes the importance of the function of the preposition in the various infinitive locutions, the second in that it follows more consistently a well-ordered grammatical plan. That of Otto is the more practical,



because it relates itself the more readily to the facts of the modern language, the infinitive being generally thought of not as a grammatical abstraction but as a dependent of its prepositional concomitant. It is also the more feasible because it avoids the juxtaposition of numerous heterogeneous examples that occurs when large grammatical categories, such as the "infinitive as object," are manipulated in aggregations that are bound to become unwieldy. Dittes, for example, assembles under the object-infinitive no less than fifteen groups of verbs, classified according to general resemblances of meaning, to which he is compelled to append — in a final counsel of desperation — a sixteenth group of unclassifiable cases (verbs *die sich in keine der bisher angeführten Gruppen einreihen lassen*). If Dittes had made a really thoroughgoing study of his entire field — which unfortunately he was very far from doing — he would doubtless have found himself involved in various still more trying complications. Subtleties of classification may make a certain appeal to the investigator's cunning, but have little if any value to the outside world; on the contrary, they definitely detract from a clear vision and apprehension of the actual problems in hand, since the greater part of the investigator's effort is directed towards the systematization rather than toward the elucidation of the many interesting phenomena encountered in his quest.

These treatises by Otto and Dittes may also serve as striking examples of two divergent notions as to the choice of the territory to be covered in such investigations. Dittes undauntedly selects a whole literature and then proceeds to glean an occasional illustration from each of a large number of sources. Otto, on the other hand, studies the use of the infinitive as exemplified in Camões alone, but does so in such careful detail that valuable bases for comparison as to the frequency, import, scope and *nuances* of each individual construction are offered for the edification of the reader. In accomplishing this, Otto has at the same time pointed a valuable moral. If an investigation of this type is not exhaustive, it misses the greater part of its potential significance. It is not enough to give a cursory

consideration to the more striking and conspicuous phenomena; the rare and remote construction may be the very one that is needed to demonstrate an obscure but interesting point.

In the present study an earnest effort has been made to treat thoroughly a few of the earliest texts of the old Spanish literature rather than to cover all texts in a necessarily superficial and inadequate way. Continual use has been made of R. Menéndez Pidal's masterly edition of the *Cantar de mio Cid*, both because of the excellent text of the *Cid* therein provided and because of the many keen observations made by this foremost Spanish scholar on all the phenomena noted in his poem. Of Gonzalo de Berceo all the extant works have been utilized, the edition of John D. Fitz-Gerald for the *Vida de Santo Domingo de Silos* and that of Antonio Solalinde for *El Sacrificio de la Misa*, along with Florencio Janer's presentment of Berceo's poems in Volume 57 of the *Biblioteca de Autores Españoles*. These latter include, beside *La Vida del . . . Sancto Domingo de Silos* and *Del Sacrificio de la Missa*, *La Estoria de Sennor Sant Millan*, *El Martyrio de Sant Laurençio*, *Loores de Nuestra Sennora*, *De los Signos que apareçeran ante del Juicio*, *Milagros de Nuestra Sennora*, *El Duelo que fizo la Virgen Maria el Dia de la Pasion de su Fijo Jesu Christo* and the *Vida de Sancta Oria, Virgen*. Morel-Fatio's edition of the Paris manuscript of the *Libro de Alixandre* has been made use of, as well as Janer's text in the *Autores Españoles*. By way of contrast with the above poetical works the *Primera Crónica General* (edition of R. Menéndez Pidal) was chosen because it contains an abundance of prose in a well-established text, and because the plural authorship offers a greater variety of constructions than would be found in other texts of similar extent. By reason of its slightly later date the *Crónica* not only offers a most valuable basis for comparison between the prose and the poetry, but serves excellently to indicate the progressive tendencies of the language in ordinary use.

Detailed mention need not be made here of all the works consulted in the progress of this study; these are more appropriately noted elsewhere. It may be said, however, that the

monumental works of Diez and of Meyer-Lübke on the grammar of the Romance languages have been found of the greatest possible usefulness, the syntactical theories of Diez having often proved themselves peculiarly sound, in spite of the fact that in special fields his investigations have been largely superseded by those of more recent scholars.

While this volume has been in course of publication there has appeared under the auspices of the "Centro de Estudios Históricos" and of R. Menéndez Pidal *La Oración y sus Partes* by Rodolfo Lenz — a syntactical study of modern Spanish along the newer psychological lines. This volume marks a decided departure from the traditional view of words and their relations, and must be taken serious account of by future expositors of Spanish syntax. The work is of special interest to linguistic scholars in general as well as to Hispanists, inasmuch as the well-known Chilean investigator has made in it an abundance of comparisons between constructions in Spanish, English, German, and South American Indian dialects. Regret must be expressed that more intimate references to it have not been possible in the body of this study.

To Professor Henry R. Lang of Yale University most cordial thanks are due for the suggestion of the subject treated and for the direction of initial efforts; to Professor Federico de Onís of Columbia University for valuable advice; and particularly to Professor Henry A. Todd of Columbia University for constant inspiration and aid during all stages of its development.

W. A. BEARDSLEY

GOUCHER COLLEGE, BALTIMORE,  
November, 1920.

# PART I

## THE PURE INFINITIVE

### I. THE INFINITIVE AS SUBSTANTIVE

1. Brugmann<sup>1</sup> shows the origin of the infinitive to have been in the so-called *nomina actionis*, and he states:

An infinitive may be said to be completely formed when the noun is no longer regarded as a case-form belonging to its own system, and its construction no longer follows the analogy of its original use as a noun. . . . Before, however, such forms were completely isolated from the nominal system, they passed through a number of intermediate stages, and hence it is often hard to say whether any particular form should be called an infinitive in the strict sense of the word.

In Latin the infinitive showed close similarity to the noun, but was capable of use only in the nominative and accusative cases.<sup>2</sup> It is true that as a substantive it could take the possessive adjective with it, but otherwise it was much restricted. In the early Romance period, when case distinctions disappeared, there disappeared also the distinction between noun and infinitive caused by difference of form. At this point, then, began the fusion of noun and infinitive uses that has progressed to so great an extent in all the Romance tongues. This dual nature — viz., of substantive and of verb — is generally quite easily perceptible in the infinitive, even in those Old Spanish occurrences where the infinitive is clearly treated as a substantive. The capacity of the infinitive to stand in

<sup>1</sup> *Comp. Gram. of the Indo-Germ. Lang.*, II, p. 470.

<sup>2</sup> Meyer-Lübke, *Gram.* III, p. 23, § 16.

a coördinate construction with a noun is shown by the following passages:

sobrepuiaua en piedad et en dar elmosnas Cron 688a21  
 et non de muerte nin morir, mas uenir Cron 701b50  
 ca tal muerte conuiene a nos, et tomarla en tal articulo Cron  
 701b45  
 con largos abondos de armas e de lidiar Cron 703b5  
 prometiendoles . . . mucho bien et mucha merçed, et meiorarles los fueros, et baxarles los pechos Cron 705a42  
 demandaron fabla et traer pleytesia con el rey Cron 766a37

In these citations the verb nature of the infinitive is clearly seen, yet also the ease with which it is used in noun constructions. None of the customary marks of the infinitive as substantive are noted here, such as the presence of the article or of a descriptive or possessive adjective. In such instances as *un beuer*, etc., the concrete sense can hardly be mistaken. An approximation of infinitive to substantive can be seen in those instances where the simple infinitive is employed for either active or passive meaning, that is, where the action of the verb is merely named but not specified; e.g., in such phrases as *digno de adorar* it is possible to consider the verb as either active or passive, and only the context of the individual passage determines the point. In these places Latin would use the active infinitive for the active sense, and the passive infinitive for the passive sense, while in Romance the single form does duty for both senses. (The active and the passive infinitive forms of Latin were reduced to a single form in Romance, *amare* and *amari* both giving *amar*, etc. In the third conjugation analogy caused the adoption of the active form, *duci* disappearing in favor of *ducere*.) This does not mean that the regular compound passive, made up of *esse* or *stare* with past participle, was not used in Romance, but that in the early language the simple infinitive is much the more common with either active or passive meaning. The verb force of the infinitive, even when used as a substantive, appears more clearly in such a phrase as *el venir yo* than in *mi venir*. Furthermore, the

infinitive as substantive can take an object, a fact that proves the full verb value of this doubly useful form (*el tomar la villa*, etc.). Diez says that Spanish surpasses her sister languages in the varied constructions of the infinitive,<sup>1</sup> and it is indeed true that the uses in Spanish are both numerous and delicate. In the realm of the infinitive as substantive Old Spanish is extremely prolific, whether in prose or poetry, whether in the earliest or the latest texts. In the following pages will be indicated the infinitives as substantives used with simple article modifiers, a comparatively small class; those with more complicated modifiers, such as the adjectives of different kinds; those found in the plural; those with subjective and objective genitive; and lastly those having an object expressed.

#### THE INFINITIVE AS SUBSTANTIVE UNMODIFIED OR WITH THE ARTICLE ONLY

2. The article with an infinitive was sufficient guarantee of the substantival nature of the latter to justify the employment of any given infinitive in the capacity of a noun.<sup>2</sup> The presence of the article did not by any means eliminate the verb value of the infinitive, but gave it a better right to act as subject or to take its place in a group of substantives. Among the infinitives used as substantives with no modification or with the articles only, the following show almost complete loss of verb force: *auer*, *beuer*, *pesar*, *plazer*, *poder*, *saber*. Yet such loss cannot be assumed as complete because of the frequency of use of any infinitive as substantive. A somewhat similar situation, but showing more of the verb, is noted in the English *holdings*, where even in the plural a vividness impossible in an ordinary substantive is given the word by the verb element present. Doubtless this can become a minimum, yet that it disappears completely is improbable. On the other hand, the verb idea is so predominant in *andar*, *correr*, *ferir*, *morir*, etc. that whether article or adjective is present to modify

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, p. 198.

<sup>2</sup> See Hanssen, *Gram.*, p. 225.

these infinitives or not, their substantival nature is not allowed to become conspicuous. In actual documents the number of infinitives with simple article modifiers is comparatively small, while those with more complicated modifiers, adjectives and adverbs, are frequent. A special *temporal* sense is present in *al* with an infinitive. This construction is current in our texts, the *Cid* yielding seven examples. The infinitive can take an object (*al leer estos duelos*), or a possessive adjective (*al so mandar*, Cron 66b41), but generally there is a genitive construction to be found. Illustrations of this are: *Al cargar de las arcas*, *Cid* 170; *al tirar de la lança*, *Cid* 3686; *al mudar de los sacos*, Cron 34a29. With verbs of motion, the genitive construction sometimes coincides with the *de* meaning *from*: *Al salir de la missa*, *Cid* 2070; *al partir del abbat*, *Cid* 1441; *Al salir de la eclesia*, *Cid* 2241. Other examples of the *al temporal* are: *Cid* 859, 2687, 3370; Cron 116b45, 255b6, 428b14, 492a29, 624a27.

The adaptability of the infinitive as substantive is well shown in:

Cinco sesos del cuerpo que nos façen peccar,  
El ver, el oir, el oler, el gostar,  
El prender de las manos que diçimos tastar    *Mil* 121

and in:

Rey de los Reyes, que non conoscoes par,  
en tu mano jaze el toller y el dar,  
el alçar e el premir, el ferir e el sanar    *Aliz* 2562

el ajuntar    *Cid* 373  
del andar e del planto    *SMil* 353, *Aliz* 2010  
non puedo traer el auer    *Cid* 91  
perderie los aueres    *Cid* 27

*Auer* also occurs in *Cid* 1254, 1261, 2260, 2495, 2529; *SDom* 114, 366; *Soria* 94; *Mil* 629; *Aliz* 61, 375, etc.

un beuer    *Cron* 30a46, 30a49  
en el cantar    *Aliz* 1689, 144  
en vn caualgar    *Aliz* 1991

el comer . . . con dolor lo comades *Aliz* 1724  
 El cometer fue malo *Cid* 3542  
 destoruan mucho el correr *Cron* 43a51  
 el dar le vale *Aliz* 62  
 razones del disputar *Cron* 189a34  
 non perdere el dormir *Aliz* 584, 28  
 tolloli el fablar *SDom* 560  
 Quando vynier al ferir *Aliz* 75  
 e el fuyr peor *Aliz* 1052  
 valen vn lydiar *Aliz* 60, 573, 759  
 destas es el manar muy ayna quedado *Aliz* 1599  
 Del minguar dize . . . *Cron* 66a10  
 el morir era malo *Aliz* 1052  
 al mover todas se esperaban *Mil* 8  
 ovo fuertes signos en el nasçer *Aliz* 2568  
 tolloli el oyr *SDom* 560  
 por dexar el pedir *SDom* 107  
 auie el pesar oluidado *Aliz* 636

*Pesar* is also used in *Aliz* 34, 35, 507, 584, 636; *SLaur* 102; *SDom* 191; *Sig* 30; *Cid* 313, 1270, 1647, 2026, 2311, 3441, etc.

en plazer caya a nos *Cid* 2629

*Plazer* also occurs in *Duelo* 45, 62; *SLaur* 102; *Aliz* 120, 1824, 1963; *Sac* 107; *Mil* 741.

un poder *Himnos* 1. 6  
 en poder dessos *Cid* 2001

*Poder* is also noted in *Cid* 669, 967, 2122, 2161, 2546, 3536; *SDom* 177, 222; *Mil* 71, 743, etc.

Al posar . . . todos se esperaban *Mil* 8  
 creença e saber *Himnos* 1. 6; *Aliz* 16; *Mil* 828  
 duró el segudar *Cid* 777, 1148, 2407  
 Sequiere leyenda, siquiere el signar *Sac* 39

#### THE INFINITIVE AS SUBSTANTIVE IN PLURAL

3. With the sign of the plural the infinitive loses its verbal quality almost entirely, and is in large part restricted to its concrete noun sense. It will be noticed that in most cases



the infinitives cited have been accepted as a part of the noun treasure of the language, and except philologically would hardly be classed under the category of infinitives. *Velares*, however, is an example of an infinitive in the plural retaining a considerable portion of its verbal force (*en combatimientos et torneos et en velares*, Cron 746a16).

darian de sus averes *SDom* 743

averes menguados *SLaur* 56

Los aueres que tenemos grandes son *Cid* 2541

*Aueres* also occurs in *Cid* 27, 45, 101, 172, 795, 1218, 1249, 1800, 1978, 2257, 2529, 2541, 2550, 2552, 2705, 2912, 3206, 3216, 3218, 3222, 3236b, 3262, 3294, 3440, 3498; *Aliz* 1575, 1585, 1862, 1863, 1873; *Mil* 627, 629.

mas que otros cantares *SDom* 318

cantares de llantos *Cron* 14a11

cantares dalegria *Cron* 41b33

veyendo los comerres *Aliz* 2364

adúzenle los comerres *Cid* 1019

dandoles . . . pozon en los comerres *Cron* 126a3, 134b17

tantos maniares *Cron* 117b2

adobar maniares *Cron* 533b28

Grandes son los pesares *Cid* 3697

nin veriemos nosotros tantos malos pesares *Aliz* 1802

fazienle muchos plazerres *Cron* 246a47

plazerres malos et lixosos *Cron* 271b26

grandes son los poderres *Cid* 669, 967

allego sus poderres *Aliz* 1167, 821

Plego grandes poderres *Aliz* 1169, 1669, 1869; *SMill* 454

las artes de los saberes *Cron* 137b20

sabidor . . . en todos los saberes de la elesia *Cron* 159b11

çenas et . . . yantares *Sig* 40

adobar de jantares *Aliz* 2469

guisaua sus yantares *Cron* 138a43

## THE INFINITIVE AS SUBSTANTIVE VARIOUSLY MODIFIED

4. Examples are given in this section of the most current constructions of the early language in which the infinitive acts as a substantive with various modifiers, such as descriptive, demonstrative, and possessive adjectives. As noted by Diez,<sup>1</sup> the adverbs *bien* and *mal* (*bien estar*, *mal estar*, etc.) can be combined with an infinitive to form new substantives. Thus by utilizing the infinitive in numerous new combinations, a considerable new vocabulary with no small degree of color and vividness was ready for popular use. For this is the main function of the infinitive as substantive, that it lends vividness and color to almost every phrase in which it is employed. Observe the difference between *el morir* and *la muerte*, *el ferir* and *la ferida* (the *dying* and the *death*, the *striking* and the *stroke*). As mentioned before, this quality, due to the presence of the verb in the infinitive, may become extremely small, so that a close approximation to ordinary nouns may result (in this group *auer*, *comer*, *iantar*, *pesar*, *plazer*, *poder*, *vagar*). This is doubtless largely due to their frequency of use, and to the absence of any adequate nominal synonyms for the concepts involved. But it seems to be more a matter of degree of loss of verb strength than of absolute loss, since it requires little effort to see even in these instances a part of the verb element surviving.

de mucho andar *Aliz* 2243

al mayor andar *Cron* 560a7

a grant andar *Cron* 731a4

grant aver<sup>2</sup> *SDom* 177, 306; *Mil* 379; *Cid* 617

auer monedado *Cid* 126, 1217; *Aliz* 227, 969, 1266; *Mil* 876; *SDom* 420; *Sig* 42

aueres monedados *Cid* 172, 2257, 3236

aver prestado *Mil* 641

aver acreído *Mil* 684

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, p. 200.

<sup>2</sup> See Menéndez Pidal, *Cid* II, *auer*.

aver en creido *Mil* 631, 672  
 aueres a nombre *Cid* 2705, 3262

*Auer* variously modified also occurs in *Cid* 101, 110, 125, 133, 484, 510, 617, 1218, 2468, 2550, 2552, 2912, 3206, 3216, 3222, 3294, 3440, 3498; *SDom* 743; *Mil* 627, 672, 678, 680; *Duelo* 62.

aquel beuer *Cron* 30a49  
 con buen beuer *Aliz* 2133  
 con el primer beuer *Aliz* 2569  
 aquel bollir fizo se con grand fuerça *Cron* 52b17

Las coplas deste cantar *Cid* 2276

todo el comer nombramos *Sac* 251  
 delgado comer *Cron* 680a40

de buen conoçer *Aliz* 119  
 de menor conosçer *Aliz* 1606

rrey . . . de tan buen creer *Aliz* 1417  
 secund el mi creer *Mil* 645; *SMill* 140  
 a mi creer *Mil* 738

el su cresçer *Cron* 671a14  
 Sobreste cresçer e minguar dell imperio *Cron* 66a10

segunt mj cuidar *SDom* 581  
 al mio cuydar *Cron* 622a22

Non es nuestro deçir *Loor* 191

(with *adverb*) tu bien estar *Aliz* 1254, 1073  
 todo su mal estar *Sac* 53  
 por mayor onta e mejor estar *Aliz* 1695

(with *adverb*) non podie auer bien fazer *Cron* 719b26  
 sobreste ferir *Cron* 74a54

*Iantar* is the only feminine substantive-infinitive in Old Spanish. The feminine here is doubtless due to the frequent association of *iantar* with *çena*, as suggested by Cornu (*Romania* XIII, p. 307). At least five instances of such association are noted in our texts: *a iantar nin a çena*, *SMill* 192; *çena o yantar*, *SDom* 300; *nin çena nin yantar*, *SDom* 499; *a iantar e a çena*,

Mil 277; *mengua de iantar nin de çena*, Mil 298; *malas çenas e peores yantares*, Sig 40.

creçió en la iantar Cid 304  
 se guisaua la yantar Cron 433a37  
 dar yantar (a) SDom 355; SMill 257; SLaur 105  
 Grand yantar le fazen Cid 285

*Iantar* as substantive also appears in SMill 231 and Cron 665b45.

de mucho yazer Alix 2243  
 al so mandar Cron 66b41  
 en lugar dotro maniar Cron 93a7  
 un mal maniar Duelo 35  
 grant mal paresçer Alix 26  
 muy buen paresçer SDom 613  
 su bel paresçer Alix 2405  
 mi paresçer Alix 2243  
 grand pesar Cid 959; Alix 40, 588, 2123; SOría 145; Mil 398, 489, 601, 682, 791; SMill 76, 191, 233, 297  
 peor pesar SMill 254  
 a todo su pesar SDom 332, 416; Alix 156, 1264  
 a todo lur pesar Alix 213  
 tantos malos pesares Alix 1802  
 fiero pesar Sig 8; Alix 1404  
 auer pesar Cid 959, 1403, 1647, 2026, 2311; SDom 191; Alix 40, 1397, 1600, 1997, 2164, 2245, 2515, 2533  
 caer en pesar (a) Cid 313, 1270; Alix 2259  
 fazer pesar (a) Alix 35  
 grant plaçer Mil 488, 490, 625; Alix 3, 1539  
 mayor plaçer SMill 235  
 mucho plaçer SOría 153  
 a todo su plaçer Alix 382  
 auer plaçer SDom 282, 306, 568; Alix 1539, 1616, 1824, 1963, 2133, 2574  
 caer en plaçer (a) SDom 99; Cid 2629; Alix 120; Duelo 45  
 fazer plaçer (a) Sac 107; Cid 2150

grant poder *Mil* 388; *SMill* 235; *SDom* 287, 551; *Loor* 155;  
*Sig* 10; *Aliz* 722, 1091, 1341, 1629, 1808, 1869, 2636

todo tu (su, etc.) poder *Aliz* 77, 487, 563, 1046, 1870; *SDom*  
 306; *Mil* 738

en poder de *Aliz* 54, 180; *Cid* 2001, 2122, 2161, 3536

a poder de *Aliz* 563, 665, 1329

aver poder de *Aliz* 996; *SDom* 581

dar poder (a) *SDom* 222, 287, 1630; *Aliz* 2296

tener en poder *SDom* 177; *Aliz* 120

*Poder* is used in similar locutions in *Cid* 486, 2105; *SMill* 454;  
*Loor* 23; *SDom* 82, 99, 153, 287, 292, 576.

su querer *Aliz* 1542; *SMill* 164

de su regnar *Cron* 668a36

las uenas del respirar *Cron* 76b42

por otro saber *Duelo* 91

vuestro bien seer *Sac* 107

de otro semejar *Aliz* 2247

auer vagar *SMill* 150; *Loor* 116, 174; *SDom* 384; *Cid* 2367;  
*Mil* 608; *Aliz* 957, 996, 1900, 1994

dar vagar (a) *Cid* 3308, 3432; *Aliz* 80, 537, 564, 618, 626, 724,  
 1077, 1090, 1316, 1558; *SMill* 445; *SLaur* 75, 88; *Duelo* 7;  
*Cron* 403b10

darse vagar *Aliz* 202, 532, 586, 1713, 2076, 2217, 2567;  
*SMill* 415; *SLaur* 102; *Cid* 434, 650, 1823, 2921; *Cron* 403b40

estar de vagar *Aliz* 1796

estar en vagar *Loor* 102; *Cron* 404b4

del mucho uelar *Cron* 17b47

a tod el velar *Cid* 2138

en su versificar *Aliz* 232, 2077

#### THE INFINITIVE AS SUBSTANTIVE WITH SUBJECTIVE GENITIVE

5. This construction offers a minimum of interest to our study because the extreme frequency of the phenomenon in the languages of today renders it familiar to all, and there is

little that can be added from Old Spanish. The noun or pronoun in the genitive relation is active, as opposed to the inactivity of the noun in genitive relation in the objective genitive construction. It is sometimes not clearly indicated whether a given genitive is acting or acted upon, whether the genitive is subjective or objective. Theoretically all cases in which the infinitive is transitive are open to confusion, actually the context permits a satisfactory solution in nearly all instances: *el prender de las manos que dijimos tastar*, Mil 121.

Sobreste crescer e minguar dell imperio Cron 66a10  
 et escreuir de las yentes Cron 99b42  
 el saber de los romanos Cron 185b3  
 el crescer et el descreçer de la luna Cron 222a18  
 El cuydar de los omnes todo es vanidat Alix 968  
 del velar de la noche era mal quebrantado Alix 1307

#### THE INFINITIVE AS SUBSTANTIVE WITH OBJECTIVE GENITIVE

6. This construction is more important to our study than that with subjective genitive because the infinitive retains a considerable part of its force as a verb, so that the noun or pronoun in the genitive is felt to be the real object of the transitive verb used. As mentioned above, the exact relation in these genitive phrases is not always clear, especially when the infinitive is transitive, and therefore open to two interpretations. Of this kind is *el saber de los romanos*, Cron 185b3, where *romanos* might theoretically be either the knowing or the known. The class of intransitive verbs of motion, with which the *de* indicates separation, is open to the same double rendering. Menéndez Pidal<sup>1</sup> says of *al partir del abbat*, Cid 1441: "á veces coincide la forma del genitivo con el régimen propio del verbo." A good example of the infinitive as substantive with objective genitive (also infinitive) not open to confusion is Cron 85b44: *es el saber*

<sup>1</sup> Cid I, § 159.

*de hablar apuestamiente*, where the *de* is evidently due to the substantival use of *saber*, since the verb *saber* does not need any *de* with its object.

Examples of the objective genitive are:

Al cargar de las archas veriedes gozo tanto *Cid* 170  
 al tirar de la lança *Cid* 3686  
 el saber de las estrellas *Cron* 658b22  
 ell fincar de los ynoios *Cron* 680a46  
 el usar de sus leyes *Cron* 103b19  
 el soltar de Sant Pedro *Cron* 120b6  
 al bendezir de las mesas *Cron* 492a29  
 del aorar de los idolos *Cron* 230b14

#### THE INFINITIVE AS SUBSTANTIVE WITH OBJECT

7. Diez says <sup>1</sup> that the substantive-infinitive having an object is more precise than the same having an objective genitive. He cites the case of *il trepassar del fiume*, which is capable of the same double meaning as *el uencer de Roma*, *Cron* 232a18. It is evident that if the *de* is omitted with verbs taking a direct object, the most precise mode of expression is employed. The construction is quite rare in Old Spanish, though Otto states <sup>2</sup> that Castilian, Catalan, and Portuguese surpass all the other Romance languages in its use. It is interesting to note that he says also that Camões does not give a single example of this phenomenon in the *Luciades*, considering it non-classical. None of our own citations come from the *Cid*, and only one from Berceo.

Complia dias e noches todo su ministerio:  
 Ieiunios e viglias e rezar el psalterio *SOria* 112  
 mandara el desfazer la ymagen de Jupiter . . . et leualla a Roma  
*Cron* 118a34  
 mando basteçer las fortalezas el refazer los muros de las uillas  
*Cron* 293b32

fazie muchas epistolas del aorar de los idolos et de poner en  
 los templos ell altar del uençimiento *Cron* 230b14

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, p. 200.

<sup>2</sup> *Rom. Forsch.* VI, p. 306.

## II. THE VERBAL PURE INFINITIVE

8. In treating the pure verbal infinitive after the infinitive as substantive, the classification of Otto for the infinitive in Camões has been utilized. This is more for convenience than because the infinitive as substantive is more important or more truly representative than the types to be treated in the sections following. In fact, it is true that as a pure substantive the infinitive does not have the more or less equally apportioned nature of noun and verb that is to be recognized in the majority of its uses. But there is no distinct line between the verb and noun uses of the infinitive, since even in the types called verbal the substantival sense can be felt, and vice versa. This is true of the pure infinitive as object, where it does not require much effort to sense a certain noun value in the verb form. For instance, *cobdição dinheiro* and *cobdição ganhar* show the similarity and the difference between the simple noun and the infinitive. The introduction of a preposition destroys the perfect objective value of the infinitive, and permits the substantival side of its nature to be considerably less evident. *Comienço trabaiar* and *comienço a trabaiar* involve two quite different phases of the infinitive construction, the place value of the *a* (and in the same way the *relative* value of *de*) preventing the infinitive from really being the object of the active verb, even though currently such constructions are considered objective. Really they are substitutes for the object construction rather than that construction itself. The types of verbal pure infinitive so-called are those most fitting the substantive. This is evident from its use as subject of a verb, as predicate, and as object with numerous classes of verbs such as those of *wishing*, *ordering*, etc. It departs considerably from possible substantive value when it indicates *purpose*



with the verbs of motion (*venir ver, yr matar*, etc.). Its use with the relative and interrogative particles (*no sabe qué se far*, Cid 370) is also considerably outside the realm of substantive uses. But at least two-thirds of the types without preposition show much resemblance to noun uses, while with the preposition the resemblance diminishes visibly. Of course numerous distinctly prepositional senses (such as *cause, means*, etc.) are completely lacking to the pure infinitive. The only common prepositional sense found in the pure infinitive is that of *purpose* (and *goal*) mentioned above for the verbs of motion. This sense is not the same, however, in the pure infinitive and in the infinitive with the prepositions *a, por, pora* and *para*. Differences of degree and definiteness exist here that will be considered under the individual prepositions. It is enough to point out here that there is a difference, and that the pure and prepositional infinitives in such instances as *va besarla* and *va pora besarla* are not really equivalent.

#### THE PURE INFINITIVE AS SUBJECT

9. There is no dependable means of distinguishing the subject-infinitive from the substantive-infinitive, as in the nature of the two constructions there cannot be. It seems that perhaps the subject-infinitive might well be considered as a special type of the substantive-infinitive, since in order to fulfil the function of subject the substantive element must be particularly strong in the infinitive. Yet the usual modification of the ordinary substantive-infinitive is lacking in the infinitive as subject in the cases following, the articles or adjectives being absent, and an object being present more frequently than not. As Otto says,<sup>1</sup> this construction was common in Latin (*Dulce et decorum est pro patria mori*). In Romance this type was extended, and numerous instances occur of infinitive as subject with *de*, at least one with *a*, and various dependent uses of the subject under the pure infinitive (impersonal verbs, etc.). As stated above for the object-infinitive, so here it is

<sup>1</sup> *Rom. Forsch.* VI, p. 307. See also Hanssen, *Gram.*, p. 253.

equally true that the pure infinitive is the logical subject use, and that the preposition disturbs the perfect harmony of the construction. *De* is more harmless here than any other preposition because of its tendency to become almost colorless in meaning, while the others retain under any conditions a large part of their original import. Examples of pure infinitive-subject are:

tablados feryr non es barraganía *Aliz* 68  
 a los unos castiga, a los otros falaga,  
 . . . que dar que prometer a todos apaga *Aliz* 73  
 cuydar non es saber *Aliz* 1728  
 escriujr aventura seria grant folia *SDom* 751  
 en qual ganancia torna aDios serujçio far *SDom* 756  
 Iudgar ageno clerigo por ley es vedado *Mil* 905  
 fazer esto era el mayor et ell meior omenage *Cron* 670b21  
 Escribir en tiniebra es un mester pesado *SOria* 10  
 Contar las sus bondades serie grant regunçerio *Mil* 709  
 Offreçer pan e uino en el sancto altar  
 offrenda es autentica *Sac* 65

#### AS SUBJECT WITH *SER* AND ADJECTIVE OR ADVERB

10. In this category the infinitive, which is really the subject of the form of *ser* employed, is subordinated to *ser* and its adjective or adverb, and in position as well as sense follows these. The two types found are *bien es yr* and *es bien yr*, in both of which the infinitive stands last.

Serie mal condempnarlo *Mil* 143  
 bien es ca no es mal saber porque es esto respuesta natural  
*Sac* 284  
 mejor te es a ti los dineros tomar *Aliz* 1244  
 en paz bien era tan grant tierra ganar *Aliz* 1253  
 es bien atales omnes solitarios beuir *Aliz* 1602  
 touo que era meior pedirles poco e yr todaui creçiendo que  
 non pedilles mucho e auer depues a menguar *Cron* 35a27  
 lo meior . . . serie despenderlos en seruicio de Dios *Cron*  
 369b26  
 meior era prouar . . . la uoluntad del çielo *Cron* 687b12

AS SUBJECT WITH *SER* AND A SUBSTANTIVE

11. Instead of *ser* and an adjective or adverb, *ser* with a substantive is quite common having an infinitive subject. The two types found are *es mala cosa lidiar* and *mala cosa es lidiar*, in which the sense of the infinitive is subordinated to that of the impersonal expression employed. Even so, there is more of a theoretical than real difference between these types and that of the pure infinitive subject in normal position: *lidiar es mala cosa*. The *de*-infinitive can appear for the pure construction in all these instances: *bien es de yr, mala cosa es de furtar*, etc.

Mala cueta es, señores, aver mingua de pan  
fijos e mugieres veer los murir de fanbre *Cid* 1178  
serie grant exaramiello fablar de su bondat *Aliz* 1541  
Non es nuestra costumbre thesoros condesar *Alex* 1769  
natura es del mundo deçender e sobir *Aliz* 2192  
El tesoro de la glesia non serie derecho  
Darlo en malos usos en mala mercadura *SLaur* 37  
Una serie grant cosa dexar tan grant convento *SMill* 373  
grant peligro era cutiano comulgar *Sac* 286  
serie luenga sogá dezir las sus bondades *SDom* 93  
es tu privilegio valer al peccador *Mil* 866

Other examples of this construction occur in *SDom* 431; *Aliz* 119, 1043; *Cron* 117b27, 143a7, 143b30, 189b26, 687a41, 687a44.

The substantive has a preposition in the following instances:

como es de costumbre offerer la mesnada *Sac* 67  
Serate, sancto padre, por grant yerro tenido  
Tu entrar en tal çena, yo fincar desffamnido *SLaur* 67

The subject-infinitive itself has a subject:

. . . non serie buen derecho  
A vassallo ageno io buscar tal provecho *Mil* 739  
grieue cosa es dexar el omne lo que mucho a tomado en costumbre *Cron* 73a13  
Serie grant daño tantas gentes morir *Aliz* 2169

*Por* and *pora* with noun may take the place of the indirect object in constructions like *esme cosa pessada Refrescar las mis penas*, *Duelo* 13:

- (*por*) seria fiera onta e grant mal paresçer  
 por el Rey Alixandre a omne obedecer *Alix* 26  
 (*pora*) Non es honrra nin presçio pora omne honrrado  
 meterse a aventura en lugar desaguisado *Alix* 2257

#### AS SUBJECT WITH IMPERSONAL VERBS

12. Meyer-Lübke gives a concise account of the impersonal verbs with infinitive as subject, in which he says: <sup>1</sup>

Dans les cas où l'infinitif équivaut à un pur substantif, son emploi comme sujet ne réclame aucun examen spécial. Cependant, lorsqu'il est uni à des verbes ou des locutions unipersonnels, bien qu'il remplisse la fonction d'auteur de l'action, il apparaît encore souvent avec une valeur presque entièrement verbale; ce sont des cas auxquels il est nécessaire de s'arrêter un instant. La règle fondamentale est celle-ci: l'infinitif n'est employé que s'il n'a lui-même aucun sujet déterminé ou bien si ce sujet est exprimé avec le verbe personnel comme régime indirect.

It will be found that these conditions are fulfilled in the citations that follow: *nos conviene fablar*, *non lis cala fazerlo*, etc. The same verb may be treated both as an impersonal (or rather as an unipersonal verb, as Meyer-Lübke calls it), and as a personal verb. Such an instance is found in *conuenir*, where evidently the precedence of the object caused a shift in the verb form: *en otras lazarias quales conuenien sofrir a los que en tal fecho estan*, *Cron* 746a18. Sometimes, as with *pertenescer*, a slightly different turn is given to the sense by the use of a preposition, in which case the verb usually becomes personal (as *de* is the only preposition adapting itself readily to use with the infinitive as subject): *nos non pertenescie estar casados*, *Cron* 620b23, but *no pertenesçien ellas pora seer nuestras mugeres*, *Cron* 620b14, noted on the same page as the impersonal construction.

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, § 339.

The examples cited by Meyer-Lübke<sup>1</sup> for the Spanish contain the impersonals *parece*, *acontece*, *es forzoso*, *es posible*. The two latter are interesting as members of a group that is as large as the individual scholar desires, since there is an almost unlimited number of adjectives that can be combined with the third person of *ser* to take either the infinitive or subjunctive, especially in the modern language, where the vocabulary and the variety of nuances of expression have been much enriched. Diez<sup>2</sup> gives a much larger list of impersonal verbs and locutions, though his work applies more to the modern period than to that of our texts: *basta*, *cale*, *conviene*, *cumple*, *importa*, *parece*, *toca*, *vale*, *no hay*, *d uno está*, etc. It is interesting to note that in the early texts there are more impersonal verbs and expressions taking *de* with the infinitive-subject than those taking the pure construction. As said before, though this delicately intrusive *de* (of *relation*) was not as logical as the pure infinitive, still it gradually came to be used with more and more verbs, the infinitive acting either as subject or as object, until it had surpassed its more logical rival. The following verbs appear with pure and *de*-infinitive subject: *abondar*, *caer*, *convenir*, *pertenescer*, *plazer*. A group which is very numerous under the *de*-infinitive and is not represented here at all, is the *venir* group: *Vinoli en coraçon de andar*, etc. Various individual verbs like *complir*, *parescer*, etc., are also confined to the *de* class, while others equally notable, such as *valer*, etc., are limited to the pure construction. There is doubtless a considerable amount of chance in this fact, both in the matter of the texts available for study, and in the absence of examples of phenomena that must have existed.<sup>3</sup>

#### **abondar.**

The *de*-infinitive also occurs with *abondar*.

non les abondo partir se ellos dell imperio obedecer Cron 168a20

no les abondo deffender su tierra Cron 168b5

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, § 339.

<sup>2</sup> *Gram.* III, p. 203.

<sup>3</sup> For a discussion of impersonal constructions in French, see Kjellman, *La construction de l'infinitif dépendant d'une locution impersonnelle en français*, etc.

**caer.**

The *de*-infinitive is also found.

tu saues en que caye captiuos redemjr *SDom* 362  
 ca cumplir tales cosas en debdo li caya *SDom* 481

**caler.**

Non lis cala demanana façer otros labores *Duelo* 175

**convenir.**

This verb also takes *de* and *a* with the infinitive.

En el terçero signo nos conviene fablar *Sig* 8  
 otro conseio te conviene prender *Mil* 645  
 Convienenos un poco la materia cambiar *SDom* 186  
 El obispo que esso auie de ministrar  
 non conviene sin sangne quel rancon entrar *Sac* 91

**doler.**

nol dolie fer mision *Aliz* 388

**enchir.**

non uos incal tomar ganancias *Cron* 438a41

**oluidarse** (see *oluidarse* with *de*, p. 117).

Non seli olujdaua orar por los passados *SDom* 79

**pertenescer.**

The infinitives with *de* and *a* are also noted with *pertenescer*.  
 nos non pertenesce estar casados con fijas de tal omne *Cron*  
 620b23

**plazer.**

The *de*-infinitive is also found with *plazer*.

plaze me yr ala casa enna qual ella posa *SDom* 103

**semeiar (-jar).**

The *de*-infinitive is also found with *semeiar*.

Aun non me semeia con esto me alçar *SDom* 387  
 me semeia razon . . . Descubrir la razon *SMill* 365  
 Semejaua onta pora sy lo dexar *Aliz* 523  
 mal nos semeja buscar cosas atales *Aliz* 2250

**ser uebos.**

Nunqua lis era uebos buscar otra mengia *SMill* 339

**uagar (v-).**

non uagaua a los de dentro fartar se de los fuegos *Cron*  
288a22

. . . tanto que les non vage las espaldas tornar *Aliz* 80

**valer (u-).**

*Valer* only takes the pure infinitive.

val aDios seruir *SDom* 560

Mas val con sendos oios salvar vuestros peccados,  
Que con los dos veervos en infierno damnados *SMill* 276

si as a enflaqueçer, mas te valdrie peresçer *Aliz* 77

mas me valdrie seyer muerto e soterrado *Aliz* 655

Mas mays les ualiera en su tierra seer *Alex* 1201

valiera seles mas en sus tiendas seyer *Aliz* 1341

mas nos valdrie morir *Aliz* 2613

mas ualdrie ficar *Cron* 15a15

mas ualdrie atender le todel poder de Roma en uno que no  
partidos *Cron* 19a6

mas ualdrie auenturarse e lidiar con el, que no pechar est auer  
*Cron* 25b44

mas ual morir que uer este astragamiento en nuestra tierra  
*Cron* 500a18

The almost universal use of *valer* in comparative sentences is to be seen in the above examples. Also the occasional use of the intrusive *non* after the comparative *que* is found, especially in the *Crónica* (*mas ualie pechar et dar de lo que ouiesse et saluar lo al, que non perder los cuerpos et quanto auien*, *Cron* 495b42).

## THE INFINITIVE AS A PREDICATE NOUN

13. With *ser*<sup>1</sup> the infinitive may stand as a predicate noun in relation to the subject. This subject may be a substantive, a pronoun, or another infinitive. No examples of the first type are noted in our texts, but the second and third are by no means rare. It will be seen that sometimes the pronoun sums up a whole clause preceding, and the syntactical relation would become quite different, though the sense would remain

<sup>1</sup> See Hanssen, *Gram.*, p. 253.

the same, if the pronoun were omitted: *la onrra del silencio, esto es callar et non fablar*, Cron 680a44. The reason that these predicate uses can be included under the pure verbal infinitive is that more activity is postulated than in ordinary substantive-infinitive uses, and there are no ordinary accompaniments of the substantive such as the articles or adjectives.

The subject is a pronoun:

*esto es dotar egleſia fascaſ darle arraſ como a eſpoſa de Criſto*  
Cron 540b6

*morredes en Criſto, que eſ ueuir, ca non morir* Cron 662a36  
*la onrra del ſilencio, eſto eſ callar et non fablar* Cron 680a44  
*aquello non era foyr, maſ yr adelant* Cron 699a23

*aquello que todo fijo dalgo deue conplir, et eſto eſ: fazer*  
*derecho, et perder miedo alli do lo deue omne perder* Cron  
738b2

The subject is an infinitive:

*cuydar non eſ ſaber* Alix 1728

*imperare eſ eſtar apareiado . . .* Cron 90b22

*affogar omne ſuſ fijoſ eſ dalleſ de pequennos et aſſoora grandeſ*  
*ſennorios* Cron 145b43

*profeſſion fazer el frayre, eſ renunçiar el mundo* Cron 692a3  
*ca dezir de la lengua de manoſ non laurar, eſſo eſ flor ſin frucho,*  
*prometer e non dar* Sac 181

Of course the infinitive treated as a real substantive occurs in the predicate noun position:

*ſeria fiera onta e grant mal paſeçer*

*por el Rey Alixandre a omne obedeçer* Alix 26

## THE PURE INFINITIVE AS OBJECT

### THE MODAL AUXILIARIES

14. Under this group will be treated *auer*, *deuer*, *poder*, *querer*, *saber*, *soler*, all with pure infinitive. A few exceptions are noted to the pure construction and these will be commented on under the individual verbs. In general, however, it is evidently true that there is no reason for a preposition



with these verbs; on the contrary, the presence of a preposition detracts from that perfect unity between infinitive and finite verb that has caused this group to be called the modal auxiliaries, i.e., aids in inflection of the verb put in the infinitive form. The preposition *a* never lost some portion of its place value, and the preposition *de*, though it became exceedingly weak at times, was never quite negligible in the sense of a phrase. The pure infinitive alone could accurately serve as object, and in these instances where the unity was so close that in one case at least the two parts were thought of and written as one (*auer* with infinitive giving the future: e.g., *dar e*), the use of a preposition with the infinitive was more antagonistic to the construction involved than in any ordinary object relation, such as *començar* with its infinitive. The auxiliaries, through continued and frequent use, came to express shades of thought not brought out in the ordinary conjugation of the verb. Thus *deuer* in some cases might weaken to an approximation of the future use; *querer* did not always express a wish as such, but developed a series of delicate related senses; *saber* and *poder* had points of contact in use, while *soler* and the imperfect indicative showed different degrees of definiteness of concept that might merge into each other. It was natural that the emphasis should fall more and more on the infinitive rather than on the finite verb, since the infinitive expressed the specific activity needed in the individual sentence, while the finite verb expressed only a general activity common to all.<sup>1</sup> It was only a matter of time until the auxiliaries came to lose nearly all their power of acting alone, and had to have another verb to form a predicate for them. One of the proofs of this close relation of finite verb and infinitive object is found in the existence of such constructions as *volo habere cantatum* standing for *habeo volutum cantare*, where the auxiliary is so weak that the sign of the perfect has gone over to the infinitive. Examples of this (*lo querria auer fecho*) will be cited under the various verbs concerned.

<sup>1</sup> Lachmund, *Inf. im Altfranz.*, p. 10.

The modal auxiliaries, as might be guessed from the above, offer the most abundant examples of the verbs taking the infinitive object. By far the most common of all is of course *auer* with infinitive in the regular future sense. *Querer* and *poder* come next in the favor of our authors. The fact that each of these appears several hundred times in the *Alixandre* and proportionately in other texts, is interesting only as showing the almost continual use of these aids by good authors, and the fact that they must have become very weak indeed to be tolerated so often. No verb retaining its full sense could be used so many times in a poem without destroying its beauty. *Deuer* and *saber* are only about one-half as frequent as *querer* and *poder*, while *soler*, with 70 occurrences, seems almost rare by comparison.

The lists of aids in inflection given by Diez, Meyer-Lübke, and Menéndez Pidal differ each from the other. Diez includes *querer*, *deber*, *poder*, *saber*, *osar*, *soler*, of which I omit *osar* in my classification; Meyer-Lübke gives *querer*, *poder*, *saber*, *deber*, *soler*, *dejar*, *hacer*, thus retaining the two causative verbs *dejar* and *hacer*; Menéndez Pidal chooses even a more generous list, *querer*, *gradar*, *dever*, *poder*, *saber*, *osar*, *treverse*, *soler*. This shows that any grouping is necessarily flexible, and chosen for convenience as much as accuracy. Individual verbs appear to one scholar as aids in inflection that to another are no more such aids than any verb in close relation with its infinitive object. My own list includes rather a minimum than a maximum of such possible verbs.

#### **auer.**

The union of the infinitive with the present and imperfect indicative of *auer* formed the customary future and conditional of Old Spanish in the same way as in other parts of the Romance field (in Italy the Classical perfect *habui* was used instead of the imperfect *habebam*). Little can be added to the knowledge of this phenomenon since it is one part of the syntax of the

Romance tongues that received prompt and thorough attention at the hands of various students.<sup>1</sup>

Hanssen states<sup>2</sup> that there were three possible ways of joining the infinitive with the form of *habere* (*auer*): *dar e yo*, *yo dar e*, and *yo e dar*. Old Spanish, Old Provençal, and Portuguese show a more primitive condition of these component parts than do other Romance tongues. From very early times the merging of the infinitive and the form of *habere* occurred in Italy and North France, but in Spain, etc., this unity was evidently not felt, as the two parts are found separated by a pronoun object (*ver lo he*). This will be discussed a little later. The third form of the combination of these elements (*yo e dar*), mentioned by Hanssen above, he finds still existing in Galicia and Portugal. In Old Spanish, however, although this form was used, it had a little more than ordinary future sense. There had been present in Vulgar Latin the two senses of *possibility* and *necessity* in the infinitive with *habere*, and in the Romance future the element of *necessity* was of course non-existent, the element of *possibility* having developed here. The sense of *necessity* was kept in the same construction, but generally when a preposition was used with the infinitive (*Maguer les pesa*, *ovieron se a dar e a arrancar*, Cid 1145). Later *auer de* supplanted *auer a* in this use, though at the period covered by this study *auer a* was considerably the more frequent. The preposition was not always employed when the sense of *necessity* was desired, however, and in these texts it is by no means rare to find form three (*yo e dar*) in the periphrastic sense. No other order is found than this, and doubtless the sense of *necessity* predominates when this order is used, though different degrees are to be felt in the examples, varying from little more than simple *futurity* to actual *necessity*. All examples of *auer* preceding

<sup>1</sup> Information concerning the development of the Romance future can be found in Thielmann, *Arch.* II, 48; Grandgent, 56; Cornu in *Fil. e Lin.* Firenze, 1886, p. 217; Bello, 689; Cejador I, 249; Tobler, II, 150; Hanssen, § 575; Diez, *Gram.* II, p. 108, and III, p. 257; Meyer-Lübke, *Gram.* II, § 112, and III, § 319.

<sup>2</sup> *Gram. Hist. Esp.*, § 575.

the infinitive are given below. Concerning the possibility of absorption of the preposition *a* by *a* preceding or following (*ouieron aplegar*, Alix 1276), see *auer a*, § 45. In such instances as *Ovose de las cuevas . . . arrancar*, SMill 46, and *ouo assacar*, Cron 112b34, *a* may be separable from the simple verb. If not, consciousness of the incorporation of *a* in the infinitive may well have militated against its repetition immediately before that form.

los que han lidiar *Cid* 3523  
 Ante que lo ouiasse Diomedes colpar *Alix* 528  
 ouieron syn grado las espaldas tornar *Alix* 537  
 Ouierote toda via mostrar vna cordura *Alix* 1138  
 ovo toda la obra por ende yr a mal *Alix* 1489  
 Los que . . . han alimosna pedir *Alix* 1596  
 Ouierante tus vasallos matar a traycion *Alix* 1668  
 Aurias a mi señero por señor catar *Alix* 1759  
 Avremos . . . la cosa destajar *Alix* 2045  
 En la primera muepta ouieron se aguardar *Alix* 2162  
 tanto ouieron atender e buscar *Alix* 2224  
 ouo el sancto Padre sentir unas atales *SDom* 490  
 Si oviesse mas un poco y estar *SOría* 157  
 Porque en tal periglo nos aves a uviar,  
 Por el tu guyonage avemos arrivar,  
 Et de aquellas ondas tan fuertes escapar *Loor* 197  
 Mucho de mayor preçio a seer el tu manto *SLaur* 70  
 Commo qui en mal anda, en mal a caer,  
 Ovieronlo con furto est ladron a prender *Mil* 146  
 Ovo del pleito todo venir deconnoçido *Mil* 696  
 quando Coymbria auie seer presa *Cron* 487b47  
 o auie seer *Cron* 625b27

Menéndez Pidal remarks in this connection that "*auer* expresa la necesidad, rigiendo al infinitivo ora con *de*, ora con *á*. La preposición falta rara vez, acaso sólo en: *los que han lidiar*, *Cid* 3523. El pretérito, rigiendo á un infinitivo con *de* ó *á*, expresa no la necesidad, sino un acaecimiento subsiguiente ó futuro respecto al tiempo pretérito de una narración."<sup>1</sup> Evi-

<sup>1</sup> *Cid* I, § 161.

dently, then, there is a difference between the preterit of this construction and the other tenses. This is found to be prevailingly true, inasmuch as in the above examples instances of the preterit show little *necessity*, often a mere *subsequent* event, as noted by Menéndez Pidal. But a purely formal statement cutting off the preterit would be misleading, because the individual examples in other tenses show a varying degree of *necessity*, and sometimes quite as much the absence of that element as in the preterit. *SLaur* 70: *Mucho de mayor preçio a seer el tu manto* shows a minimum of *necessity*, and a maximum of *futurity*. The same might be said of *Cron* 487b47: *quando Coymbria auie seer presa*, and of *Commo qui en mal anda, en mal a caer*, *Mil* 146, where the element of *futurity* is strong. It is difficult to prove much concerning the pure infinitive in these tenses because of the small number of examples, the prepositional construction so largely predominating.

When Menéndez Pidal states that there is no *necessity* in the preterit, but merely a *subsequent* fact, he is stating the principle for the prepositional infinitive with *auer*. However, it is shown under *auer a* that this is not true for the prepositional infinitive, instances being found showing *necessity* as clearly as in any other tense. If the principle were true for the infinitive with prepositions, it would probably hold for the pure infinitive in this construction, since one of the most important facts noted in this study of the *auer* construction is that no dividing line can be drawn between the cases with preposition and those without. For instance, *ovo todos los pleitos la dueña a saber*, *Alix* 382, and *Ovo del pleito todo venir deconnoçido*, *Mil* 696, show decided similarity in the connotation of the infinitive constructions. There is the same sense of *subsequence* in the locution in both cases. This argument might be developed much further, but without profit. The main difference between the pure and the prepositional infinitive at this time is that the pure form (the original construction) is quite rare except in the regular future sense, while the prepositional infinitive, especially that with *a*, is extremely common. As

to the element of *necessity*, it can be felt in various instances in the preterit, whether there is preposition or not. Often it can be felt but not proved. And it is not to be expected that it could very often be definitely proved considering the delicacy of the sentiment involved, and its easy merging into the sense called above *subsequent*. Most instances can be construed with or without *necessity* in the preterit, but some naturally imply it, e.g., *ouieron syn grado las espaldas tornar*, Alix 537, where there can be no doubt as to the *necessity*. Also *tanto ouieron atender e buscar*, Alix 2224, and *Ovose de las cuevas por esso arrancar*, SMill 46, most fittingly take a sense of *necessity* as against simple *subsequence*. A few cases of the prepositional use having *necessity* are interesting for comparison with those above: *maguer les pesa, oviéronse a dar e a arrancar*, Cid 1145; *ouieronle syn grado el campo a dexar*, Alix 654; *ouieron a tollerse del portillo syn grado*, Alix 214. Without *necessity*, but with preposition, are noted among numerous others: *ouolo a vencer*, Alix 166; *ouo el arbol a fallar*, Alix 311; *ouieron a veyer*, Alix 389.

Concerning the first method of combining the infinitive with the auxiliary, as mentioned by Hanssen (*dar e yo*), in the regular future sense, the most important fact is that the combining parts could be separated by one or more pronoun objects (*ver lo he, dar gelo he*, etc.). The examples of this so-called *split future* are quite numerous in Old Spanish, offering abundant material for study of the phenomenon. The facts are, however, very simple. Such separation of the auxiliary and the infinitive was customary in our texts when a pronoun object was present. It was not obligatory, however, as evidenced by Cid 1310: *Dexarévos las posadas*, and Soria 136: *veráste*. The separation caused no change in the sense involved, as shown by the fact that the future, united and split, could present its forms side by side in equivalent function and sense: *non nos daran dent (nada)*; *la paria . . . tornar nos la ha doblada*, Cid 586. Also Cid 1438: *dexaremos Burgos, ir lo hemos buscar* and *hir los hemos fferir, non passará por al*, Cid 1690. Examples of the *split future* in our texts are:

el rey querer me ha por amigo *Cid* 76  
 doblar vos he la soldada *Cid* 80  
 fer lo he amidos *Cid* 84  
 enpeñar gelo he *Cid* 92  
 dexar las ha en vuestra mano *Cid* 117  
 pedir vos a poco por dexar so aver en salvo *Cid* 133  
 dar gelos hemos de grado *Cid* 136  
 mereçer no' lo hedes *Cid* 197  
 atorgar nos hedes esto *Cid* 198  
 castigar los he commo abrán a far *Cid* 229  
 seervos han doblados *Cid* 251  
 partir nos hemos *Cid* 272  
 poder nos han alcançar *Cid* 390  
 tornar nos la ha doblada *Cid* 586  
 exir nos ha el pan *Cid* 667  
 tener la edes sin arth *Cid* 690  
 dezir vos he la verdad *Cid* 947  
 ir gelo he yo demandar *Cid* 966  
 dar nos ha grant batalla *Cid* 987  
 quitarvos he los cuerpos e darvos e de mano *Cid* 1035b  
 dar vos he de mano *Cid* 1040  
 ir nos hemos pagando *Cid* 1046  
 auerlohan por ello muchos a conoçer *Alix* 3  
 auer me ha como fijo la mano a besar *Alix* 25  
 echarteha en lugar onde, fijo, dios te defienda *Alix* 54  
 Cambiar se a la uentura *Alex* 74  
 fallarte as bien en ello *Alix* 353  
 auerteha a querer *Alix* 377  
 ferteas dios caridat *Alix* 379  
 averteta a nozir *Alix* 781  
 dexaruos han el canpo *Alix* 932  
 auer les han despecho *Alix* 1431  
 Descubriruos he el renglon *Alex* 1794  
 yr lo as ensayando *Alix* 2279  
 tollernos ha las almas *Alix* 2420  
 fer lo ha volenter *Alix* 2427  
 yr se nos ha aguisando . . . la yantar *Alix* 2512  
 fer uos he syn los oios *SDom* 143  
 enujar uos lo emos *SDom* 365  
 saber uos an meior *SDom* 385

dezir uos an mjl pares de tales *SDom* 386  
 ir uos las e contando *Sac* 179  
 Aplanarse an las sierras *Sig* 16  
 Abrirse an las fuessas *Sig* 18  
 Oyrlo an los muertos *Sig* 22  
 Tornarse a los justos ha el Rey glorioso *Sig* 27  
 Façerlis a un sermon *Sig* 27  
 Deçirles a *Sig* 31

It is not uncommon to have contracted forms in this *split future*, as in *Cron* 41a23: *antoiar se ta*, where the *e* of *te* has disappeared; in *Cron* 43b44, *fazellas* is equivalent to *fazer lo as*, and in *Cron* 73b32, *pedir ledes* to *pedir le hedes*. Probably the most current contraction is formed with the first person singular present indicative of *auer*, where the *e* of *me*, *te*, *le*, is absorbed by the *e* of *he* (*h* not regularly written): *Mostrarte los tesoros*, *SLaur* 94; *dexar mê morir*, *Cid* 1029; *Dezirte*, *Alix* 1979; *Darte yo casamiento*, *Alix* 370; *darle mis medeçinas*, *Alix* 380; *Darté*, *Mil* 641; *Acreerté*, *Mil* 644; *Mostrarté*, *Mil* 648; *ferté*, *Mil* 689. Not always, however, is this absorption found: *fertehe a mis rrapazes prender e enforçar*, *Alix* 766.

Examples of the *split future* for possible reference are: *Cid* 280, 1423, 1438, 1447, 1487, 1523, 1641, 1668, 1688, 1690, 1768, 1808, 1820, 1908, 2045, 2330, 2366, 2410, 2411, 2481, 2546, 2563, 2564, 2568, 2575, 2627, 2733, 2992, 3141, 3168, 3223, 3359, 3389, 3411, 3450, 3451; *Alix* 225, 752, 764, 791, 798, 902, 903, 932, 966, 1039, 1243, 1247, 1601, 1649, 1711, 1862, 1992, 2069, 2229, 2420, 2608, 2620; *Loor* 169, 172, 175, 181, 218; *SLaur* 11, 36, 76, 86, 94; *Sig* 36, 37, 39, 40, 44, 46, 70; *Mil* 137, 248, 484, 625, 641, 644, 648, 689, 739, 841, 885; *Cron* 401a10, 402b19, 403b15, 404b40, 415a29, 416b23, 416b33, 417b38, 421a18, 428a40, 428a41, 433b46, 434a12, 435a3, 435a6, 435a9, 435a10, 435b34, 436a21, 438a8, 440b34, 442b12, 442b14, 442b15, 442b21, 442b23, etc.

The conditional presents in general the same situation as the future in regard to the separation of the infinitive and the auxiliary (with the imperfect indicative instead of the present).



The instances of it are considerably less frequent than those of the future, but are by no means rare. Contractions are also found in the forms of the conditional even more than in those of the future, and absorption of one of two vowels coming together is noted, e.g., *Semeiar mie*, *Sac* 157; *poder sie perder Carthago*, *Cron* 46a30; *darlye mala fiesta*, *Alix* 1113. Examples of the *split* conditional are:

Conbidar le ien de grado *Cid* 21  
 dar le ien seysçientos marcos *Cid* 161  
 buscar nos ie el rey Alfonsso *Cid* 528  
 aver vos lo iedes de far *Cid* 678  
 fer lo ien de grado *Cid* 1250  
 querer vos ye veer e darvos su amor *Cid* 1945  
 acordar vos yedes despues *Cid* 1946  
 aver la yemos nos *Cid* 2663  
 encarnarseyan en nos *Alix* 724  
 darleyen vagar *Alix* 724  
 yrseyan a la çibdat *Alix* 726  
 yrlesyen los de dentro a fuera rrefriendo *Alix* 726  
 fersie de su locura mucho marauillado *Alix* 828  
 gradeçerteloya *Alix* 1042  
 prender los ya la noche, fer los ya derramar *Alix* 1279  
 fersenosyan lenguados *Alix* 1304  
 si non fer se nos ye mucho grant la iornada *Sac* 136  
 querermia partir *Cron* 33b38  
 auella yen *Cron* 45a33  
 tornar se les ye *Cron* 45a38  
 dar se ye *Cron* 65b41  
 combater le yen et quexarle *Cron* 83b22

The last citation is particularly interesting as showing that the infinitive and the auxiliary were thought of as separate entities, since here the second infinitive is allowed to stand alone, with one *yen* doing duty for both *combater* and *quexar*.

#### deuer.

There is no perceptible change of meaning when the preposition *a* is used in the few cases in the *Crónica* in which *deuer* appears without the pure infinitive. For instance, in *deuemos*

*nos a temer*, we have a slightly emphatic equivalent of *deuemos temer*. There seems to be no trace of *deuer de* in the early texts, although by the time of Cervantes it was not uncommon. Grammarians say that *deuer* with pure infinitive denotes duty and necessity, while with *de* it denotes rather probability.

The use of the tenses of *deuer* in Old Spanish is found to be far from fixed. The present has the variety of meanings common in French, from *duty* and *necessity* in such cases as *devemos vencer*, Cid 995, to the weakened *necessity* approaching *futurity* of *tu deues esta cosa iuzgar*, SDom 425, and the *futurity* or *probability* in *deues . . . tu auer pagamiento* Alix 1243. This tense is the one most commonly used, and frequently makes the action of the verb more realistic in places where other tenses, such as the imperfect or conditional, would be more logical.

Examples of the present tense of *deuer* with dependent infinitive will be found in the *Cid* 315, 1107, 1457, 3363; *Alix* 35, 38, 43, 65, 77, 79, 120, 222, 239, 277, 327, 352, 357, 358, 359, 454, 477, 658, 749, 770, 772, 776, 827, 931, 1140, 1206, 1210, 1243, 1254, 1313, 1314, 1323, 1348, 1422, 1425, 1641, 1652, 1677, 1689, 1792, 1829, 1865, 2232, 2254, 2270, 2308, 2347, 2365, 2369, 2372, 2375, 2401, 2416, 2421, 2487, 2562, 2563, 2634, 2635, 2637; *Soria* 89, 153; *Mil* 74, 121, 141, 158, 201, 262, 280, 351, 430, 451, 541, 542, 543, 559, 562, 786, 791, 845, 859, 868; *Sac* 37, 46, 47, 48, 66, 70, 99, 118, 119, 170, 172, 174, 175, 181, 190, 226, 250, 251, 260, 264, 284, 290, 291; *SDom* 102, 139, 145, 252, 287, 311, 312, 313, 315, 335, 425, 462, 613, 644, 658, 719, 756, 777; *Loor* 17, 44, 69, 104, 112, 119, 135, 155, 182, etc.

The imperfect denotes weakened *necessity* in cases like *deuien perecer*, Sac 242. This type is common to all the texts with the exception of the *Cid*. This poem shows the use of *deuer* sparingly in all meanings, yielding only seven passages with *deuer* in the whole 3700 lines, a somewhat remarkable fact, considering its frequent repetition of many infinitive constructions.

Examples of the imperfect of *deuer* denoting weakened *necessity*:

asy deuien moryr *Aliz* 171  
 non los deuie guaryr *Aliz* 171  
 deuie auer tal cabo *Aliz* 216  
 Mas el engannador lo debie padeçer *Mil* 207  
 Cada uno en su trono en que debia juzgar *SOria* 86  
 nol deuja ualer *SDom* 740

The imperfect is also found in places where the conditional would be more logical. In all the texts except the *Alizandre* the conditional is decidedly rare. Examples of the imperfect for the conditional:

debiamos todos aver ende pavura *Sig* 67  
 non fablas como deujas fablar *SDom* 311  
 deuia seer scripto *SDom* 441  
 deuja seer metida en arca mas preçiosa *SDom* 673  
 Non las deviemos tomar por varraganas *Cid* 2759  
 non gelas devién querer sus fijas por varraganas *Cid* 3276  
 deviemos casar con fijas de reyes o de enperadores *Cid* 3297  
 deuie seer mejor *Aliz* 268

Other examples of the imperfect of *deuer*: *Aliz* 171, 208, 223, 277, 581, 876, 1044, 1097, 1115, 1350, 1417, 1602, 1652, 1707, 1721, 1761, 1790, 1840, 2188, 2194, 2239, 2299, 2564, 2578, 2619, 2631; *Duelo* 125, 128, 146; *Loor* 115, 173, 174; *SOria* 24, 86; *Mil* 207, 398, 511, 528, 547, 548, 549, 786, 901; *SLaur* 38, 74; *SMill* 25, 40, 267, 396, 468, 469.

Berceo only uses the conditional (excluding the *Alizandre*) in the following passages, and it is to be noted that three cases occur in practically one passage, i.e., the use of the conditional in the first passage probably caused the use of the next two.

Non me devries agora, padre, deseparar *SLaur* 65  
 devriesme perdonar *SLaur* 66  
 Non devries al tu siervo tal ira condesar *SLaur* 66  
 Debie andar devoto e andaba lozano *Mil* 162  
 debriemos escribilla *Mil* 215  
 Debriame lo mismo con mis manos matar *Mil* 760

The conditional appears more frequently in the *Alizandre* than in the other poetical works:

deurie auer toda mala ventura *Alix* 371  
 deurién vençer vn mundo sola ment a dientes *Alix* 806  
 Nunca en esti mundo deurie omne fiar *Alix* 980

Also *Alix* 982, 1184, 1210, 1241, 1242, 1482, 1597, 1628, 1675, 1784, 1788, 1809, 1836, 1908, 2396, 2508, 2574.

The conditional is used with the passive infinitive in:

deurie seyer contado *Alix* 1411  
 deurie jazer ençerrado *Alix* 2090  
 Debria ser servido con grant devoçion *Loor* 74

The preterit occurs once in *Loor* 98:

por mi feçiste tanto que mas fer non debiste

#### poder.

Little comment need be made on this most popular of verbs, as the syntax is simple and regular. Occurrences will be noted under the tenses found in the texts. The *Cid*, *Santo Domingo*, and the *Sacrificio* are represented in the list as well as the *Alizandre* as far as stanza 1000. The references are given because of any possible interest attaching to them in connection with other subjects, though they have no importance in the present study.

(pres. ind.) *Cid* 91, 116, 423, 516, 542, 546, 555, 633, 713, 830, 948, 984, 1030, 1032, 1177, 1180, 1304, 1388, 1636, 1782, 2007, 2058, 2617, 2747, 2784, 2913, 3126, 3172, 3183, 3254, 3257, 3307, 3358, 3468, 3529; *SDom* 47, 132, 150, 153, 154, 155, 171, 176, 202, 204, 287, 288, 337, 349, 362, 365, 384, 458, 570, 599, 658, 696, 712, 759; *Sac* 95, 118, 120, 263, 286; *Alix* 35, 43, 53, 63, 71, 133, 144, 193, 194, 219, 233, 234, 327, 330, 351, 358, 363, 374, 487, 506, 538, 623, 648, 658, 680, 741, 749, 753, 758, 982.

(impf. ind.) *Cid* 171, 1281; *SDom* 19, 46, 173, 185, 292, 294, 357, 410, 426, 506, 538, 539, 550, 568, 578, 591, 597, 606, 607, 676, 688, 726, 755; *Sac* 88, 121, 289; *Alix* 29, 174, 232, 286, 303, 321, 328, 340, 403, 404, 409, 411, 446, 474, 507, 521, 523,

532, 535, 537, 544, 561, 565, 566, 581, 603, 627, 673, 703, 705, 719, 731, 814, 829, 837, 942.

(pret.) *Cid* 704, 946, 1151, 1427, 1777, 3681; *SDom* 244, 250, 378, 439, 485, 516, 556, 589, 609, 640, 641; *Sac* 121, 124; *Aliz* 16, 20, 150, 151, 154, 166, 167, 210, 219, 246, 311, 390, 403, 419, 446, 492, 507, 604, 606, 618, 624, 654, 704, 811, 816, 912, 981, 997, 1000.

(fut.) *Cid* 424, 619, 1468, 1524, 1640, 1869, 2360, 2542, 2553, 2867; *SDom* 33, 282; *Sac* 126, 233; *Aliz* 35, 296, 336, 369, 374, 378, 874, 931.

(condtl.) *Cid* 310, 531, 699, 835, 1214, 1218, 1311, 1313; *SDom* 163, 170, 176, 186, 331, 341, 363, 384, 390, 406, 420, 506, 507, 537, 574, 756; *Sac* 65, 121, 170, 235, 260, 271, 287; *Aliz* 1, 32, 33, 44, 104, 113, 393, 399, 409, 524, 557, 670, 708, 793, 815, 819, 824, 853, 857, 880, 922, 924, 925.

(pres. subj.) *Cid* 302, 2868; *SDom* 99, 180, 323, 576, 624, 763, 766; *Sac* 22, 70, 81, 248; *Aliz* 24, 74, 120, 121, 154, 669, 966, 980.

(impf. subj.) *Cid* 309, 1250, 1253, 2377, 2662, 3540; *SDom* 53, 122, 342, 357, 363, 420, 431, 442, 485, 516, 765; *Sac* 167; *Aliz* 38, 47, 94, 99, 110, 156, 165, 169, 246, 323, 395, 396, 472, 486, 529, 590, 605, 606, 704, 720, 724, 734, 815, 816, 848, 875, 881, 882, 982, 999.

(impf. subj. *pudiera* type) *SDom* 127; *Aliz* 581, 826.

(fut. subj.) *Cid* 1466; *SDom* 365, 664; *Aliz* 61, 76, 793.

(pres. partic.) *Cid* 2967.

### querer.

When *quaerere* supplanted *volere* in the Spanish peninsula, it increased the variety of its uses and senses. Concerning *querer* in the *Cid*, Menéndez Pidal remarks:

*querer* expresa naturalmente el deseo de hacer algo: *exir querien a batalla* 662, 1776, 3098, y negativo 538. De aquí pasó á indicar el comienzo de una acción, el sentido inceptivo: 'estar á punto de': *la noch querie entrar* 311, 231, 235, 367, 665, 696, 1143. La perífrasis sirve sólo para hacer más vehemente un ruego: *no lo quiera olvidar* 1444, y llega á ser casi perífrasis inútil.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Cid* I, § 160.

This statement of the uses of *querer* with infinitive is found in general to be accurate, its only fault being that it does not take enough account of the delicate shades of sense lying between the points brought out so clearly. It is as impossible to tabulate the individual instances of *querer* and put them all in their respective classes as it is those of *auer a*, etc. It is easy to see the starting point of change in *querer* as well as in *auer a*, but after this point it is only the more glaring examples that let themselves be accurately judged. That *querer* did not express wish or desire on all occasions would be inferred from its very frequency in the texts considered. In the first 1550 stanzas of the *Alixandre* there are 300 instances of it, with approximately this proportion in other documents. The *inceptive* sense mentioned by Menéndez Pidal above (*to be on the point of, to be nearly*, etc.) is noted quite frequently. Probably numerous other instances than those cited by Menéndez Pidal or these following could be found in our texts, the only difficulty being to prove the presence of the *inceptive* sense rather than that of *wishing*. Theoretically, *desire* and *inception* may equally apply to all animate subjects. That is, in such instances as the first one cited by Menéndez Pidal (*exir querien a batalla*, *Cid* 662) and most others with personal subject, there is only the inaccurate evidence of the context to show whether *querer* indicates a *wish* or an *inception*. With impersonal or inanimate subject, the probabilities are clearly in favor of the *inceptive* sense. This is shown very well by these examples:

Quando de la grant nave quisse fuera salir,  
 Ca pareçe por oio que se querie somir *Mil* 607  
 Ia querie ser ora de maytines tañer,  
 la estrella del çielo queria paresçer *Aliz* 1286  
 querie vn dia malo e negro amanaçer *Aliz* 1286  
 el sol querie apuntar *Cid* 682  
 quiérel crebar el coraçón *Cid* 1660  
 tembrar querie la tierra *Cid* 3619  
 non a queria estar *SDom* 454

Other instances of the *inceptive* sense in *querer* follow:

con la grant calentura del fuego que les ardie açerca, querien  
se perder de sed *Cron* 136a32

ya tenblaua la tapia, queria se acostar *Alix* 213

querie de calentura moryr toda la gent *Alix* 864

sintiosse tan flaco que entendio bien que querie morir *Cron*  
137b38

El bueno de Minaya penssar quiere de caualgar *Cid* 1430p<sup>1</sup>

el março quiere entrar *Cid* 1619

In *Hya quieren caualgar*, *Cid* 2591p<sup>1</sup>, and in *SDom* 1.2, *Quiero fer una prosa*, there is probably more of *inception* than of *wish*, but the construction is indefinite in any event.

Menéndez Pidal also says that *querer* "sirve sólo para hacer más vehemente un ruego." Probably, also, in being less direct it was considered more polite, removing the objectionable force of the regular imperative form. It was so used in the *Santo Domingo* in addressing the king:

Rey, yo bien te conseio commo a tal sennor,

Non quieras toller nada al sancto confessor *SDom* 154

A parallel construction is seen in the French *veuillez* with dependent infinitive. Here the construction has become fixed as a form of polite address, while its use in Old Spanish was quite exceptional. When employed, it evidently conveyed more meaning than would appear in the French construction.

Compare also:

que non me quieras tan mucho segudar *SDom* 176

Date al guarir luego, non te quieras tardar *SDom* 724

Aside from this use the present subjunctive of *querer* is itself not very commonly employed. The future subjunctive is more in evidence than the present, and lends itself a little more easily to the sense that the present might have. I only note three examples of the present subjunctive of *querer* with infinitive object in the *Cid* while the future subjunctive is found in at least seven passages, about the same proportion holding in the other texts:

<sup>1</sup> Edición paleográfica.

(pres. subj.)

Antes . . . que el sol quiera rayar *Cid* 231  
 que nos queramos ir de noch no nos lo consinrán *Cid* 668  
 no lo quiera olbidar *Cid* 1444

(fut. subj.)

Si el rey me lo quisiere tomar *Cid* 230  
 El qui quisiere comer *Cid* 421  
 los que lo quisieren far *Cid* 891  
 si en estas tierras quisiéremos durar *Cid* 1120  
 Los que quisieren ir servir al Campeador *Cid* 1369  
 quien vos lo toller quisiere *Cid* 3520  
 qui tuerto quisiere fazer *Cid* 3601

When Menéndez Pidal says that “querer llega á ser casi perfrasis inútil,” it is easy to know what he means, but hard to justify so broad a statement, especially when he cites no examples from the *Cid*. He remarks almost the same thing of *fazer*, *mandar*, *yr*, *tornar a* and *de*, when these verbs have dependent infinitive object. That is, all these locutions are said to become so weak as to give little or no meaning to a phrase other than would be given by the properly inflected form of the infinitive changed into a finite verb. There is much truth in this without doubt, since each of these locutions became a formula that diminished in strength almost in proportion to its frequency of use. But there always seems to be some remnant of the original sense left even when these locutions are at their weakest. In the case of *querer* it is easier to show such weakening than in *fazer*, etc., but even here, although the idea of *wishing* has allowed itself to be considerably changed and weakened, it cannot be thought a negligible factor in the sentence. One real weakening of *querer* is mentioned by Meyer-Lübke,<sup>1</sup> who states that it becomes sometimes a practical future. *Querer* and infinitive may be considered quite as logical a formation for the future idea as that which prevailed largely in the Romance territory, *auer* and infinitive. The difficulty here as elsewhere in dealing with fine shades of sense is to find examples

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, § 322.



that conclusively show the phenomena that are known to exist. Thus it is impossible to accurately gauge the proportion of real *desire* and *futurity* that was intended in single instances of *querer*. It is possible, however, to find examples that permit more of *futurity* than of *desire* to be read into them. Thus in the *Cid* 2571, *hyo quiéroles dar axuvar tres mill marcos de valor*, *futurity* is more natural than *desire*, as is evidenced by the use of the regular future in other parts of the sentence, e.g. *darvos he dos espadas*, *Cid* 2575. Though either sense is possible in the following cases, *futurity* is more evident than *desire*:

enbiar la quiero a Alfonsso el Castellano *Cid* 1790  
 cometer quiero un ruego a mio Cid *Cid* 2073  
 no lo quiero fallir por nada de quanto ay parado *Cid* 2224  
 Hyo con los mios ferir los quiero delant *Cid* 2358  
 dárgeles queremos delant estando vos *Cid* 3174

Meyer-Lübke<sup>1</sup> states that *habeo volutum cantare* was replaced by *volo habere cantatum* (*querer* standing for *volere* in Spanish). In such cases the auxiliary has lost its original strength, and the infinitive, which to the speaker seems more important in the immediate phrase, has taken on the sign of the perfect. The construction is, however, rare in the texts considered. Only passages containing the conditional instead of the simple perfect are noted. A conspicuous example occurs in *Alix* 1156:

Ouiero Alixandre desti logar oydo,  
 ya lo querie auer de su grado veydo,  
 ya querie su ofrenda auer y ofresçido,  
 e aurie de su grado de aquesa agua beuido

Non lo querria por nada aver acometido *SMill* 270  
 no lo querrien aver fecho por quanto ha en Carrión *Cid* 3570  
 non querrien por grand cosa non seer y uenidos *SDom* 545

Meyer-Lübke<sup>1</sup> also suggests that in *SMill* 105, *querer* takes an infinitive object governed by *de*, and that therefore *querer* could be construed with *de* in Old Spanish in much the same way as *asmar de*:

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, § 325.

Sennor, si tu quisiesses, yo mucho lo querria,  
De vevir solitario commo vevir solia

This is hardly a normal example of *querer de*, however, since the infinitive is really in apposition with *lo*, and the infinitive in such apposition was used with or without *de*. This phenomenon is treated under the *Infinitive in Apposition* in § 79 of this study. One valid example of *querer de* does occur in *Cron* 450b37: *adolesçiose Dios de la yent, et quiso por su merçed de mostrar esta grand coyta por quien era.*

Instances of *querer* and infinitive occur as follows:

(pres. ind.) *Cid* 85, 194, 235, 252, 314, 367, 529, 533, 534, 813, 816, 890, 899, 1020, 1029, 1143, 1189, 1191, 1192, 1198, 1257, 1271, 1274, 1298, 1299, 1310, 1416, 1430, 1506, 1619, 1620, 1649, 1660, 1765, 1776, 1790, 1879, 1886, 1888, 1913, 2073, 2115, 2120, 2130, 2224, 2260, 2358, 2374, 2379, 2414, 2571, 2591, 2711, 3026, 3078, 3098, 3174, 3233, 3388, 3507, 3535; *Sac* 2, 39, 62, 73, 85, 94, 108, 118, 126, 136, 163, 174, 183, 196, 263, 290, 293, 296; *SDom* 1, 2, 101, 103, 112, 133, 136, 143, 148, 180, 201, 228, 261, 289, 312, 321, 337, 352, 387, 487, 518, 533, 536, 581, 613, 636, 644, 683, 684, 695, 696, 721, 732, 759, 775; *Aliz* 1, 4, 5, 14, 50, 55, 60, 63, 80, 98, 104, 105, 126, 132, 144, 148, 194, 232, 286, 290, 330, 349, 351, 359, 363, 366, 375, 403, 416, 455, 622, 637, 700, 732, 777, 781, 782, 793, 887, 904, 926, 933.

(impf. ind.) *Cid* 36, 311, 429, 662, 665, 682, 696, 1577, 3000, 3619; *Sac* 4, 111, 125, 244; *SDom* 13, 16, 39, 88, 187, 251, 421, 422, 454, 514; *Aliz* 27, 36, 123, 126, 165, 173, 197, 201, 210, 213, 246, 252, 304, 390, 411, 427, 490, 518, 572, 600, 603, 675, 789, 805, 822, 829, 858, 864, 892, 939, 988.

(pret.) *Cid* 265, 517, 851, 1202, 1693, 2850, 2898, 3044, 3112, 3157; *Sac* 51, 65, 74, 218, 220, 242, 293, 296; *SDom* 19, 53, 54, 62, 112, 119, 163, 219, 225, 253, 289, 304, 311, 340, 370, 416, 428, 498, 559, 560, 570, 607, 613, 645, 767, 769; *Aliz* 7, 88, 118, 119, 126, 174, 182, 185, 196, 200, 227, 402, 411, 472, 508, 521, 554, 564, 565, 606, 623, 625, 653, 719, 741, 779, 809, 887, 889, 892, 897, 912, 915, 933, 976.

(fut. ind.) *Cid* 133; *Alix* 349, 380, 954.

(condtl.) *Cid* 104, 538, 2373, 2376, 3433, 3570; *Sac* 1, 70, 145; *SDom* 21, 73, 91, 175, 222, 238, 250, 294, 315, 317, 318, 335, 404, 545, 629, 697, 759; *Alix* 1, 26, 419, 454, 467, 537, 575, 634, 704, 768, 803, 881, 893, 931, 933, 938.

(pres. subj.) *Cid* 231, 668, 1444; *SDom* 154, 176, 724; *Alix* 58, 142, 374, 947.

(impf. subj.) *Cid* 2994; *Sac* 63; *SDom* 88, 91, 376, 391, 735; *Alix* 141, 419, 441, 505, 637, 638.

(fut. subj.) *Cid* 230, 421, 891, 1120, 1369, 3520, 3600; *Sac* 181, 233, 260; *SDom* 53, 96, 155, 246, 282, 315, 386, 499; *Alix* 3, 52, 61, 63, 74, 98, 194, 240, 336, 408, 648, 749, 764, 766, 909.

(pres. partic.) *SDom* 107.

### saber.

The divergence and confluence in meaning of *saber* and *poder* in sense and treatment will be seen in the examples following:

Sabiense rrica ment guardar e encobryr,  
por ninguna manera non se podien feryr *Alix* 521

tan bien se sabien amos guardar e encobrir,  
por ninguna manera non se podien nozir *Alix* 565

supoli bien Patruculo el colpe desechar,  
nol pudo de la punta en derecho tomar *Alix* 624

Etor, maguer veye que non podie guarir,  
el su grant coraçon non lo sabia enflaquir *Alix* 673

Avn, mager pudiesemos a la tierra tornar . . .  
vasallos syn señor saben se mal guardar *Alix* 875

Nunca en esti mundo deurie omne fiar  
que sabe a los omnes tan mala çaga dar,  
sabe a sus amigos poner en mal lugar  
por que peor los pueda en cabo quebrantar *Alix* 980

Tan bien e tan apuesto sabie duelo fazer  
que non podien los otros las lagremas tener *Alix* 1217

Supoli bien el otro el pleito destajar,  
quando vio que al cuerpo non li podie llegar *Alix* 1333

Sovose muy quedado, sopose encobrir,  
Atendia esta cosa a que podrie exir *SDom* 163

Non podriemos sin esso la razon acordar,  
Porque nos alonguemos bien sabremos tornar *SDom* 186

Cadio antel a prieçes, mas non podie fablar:  
Mas el Sennor que saue la uoluntad juzgar *SDom* 607

A tal sennor debemos servir, e aguarar,  
Que sabe a sus siervos de tal guisa onrrar:  
Nol podrie nul omne comedir, nin asmar,  
En qual ganancia torna a Dios servicio far *SDom* 756

The concepts present in the two verbs, though distinct, show certain points of contact. *Saber* generally includes all of *poder* and adds to it its idea of *knowing*. *Saber* adds to an expression a personal touch that is absent in *poder*. Thus, when one of the two might be expected, the other is sometimes found in a given passage, adding or changing the sense most subtly. *Saber* was often used as an emphatic substitute for *poder*, when *poder* would have seemed weak and colorless because of its being one of the two most frequent infinitive-taking verbs of Old Spanish.

One interesting example of *saber* and infinitive, each having an object, and the personal object of *saber* evidently indirect, occurs in *Cron* 90a27: *fizo el solo sin ayuda dotri lo que no sabien a otro omne fazer fasta aquella sazón*. This would be considered regular according to the usage of two objects with *fazer*, *ver*, etc. References are classed below according to tense, as was done for *poder* above.

(pres. ind.) *Cid* 373, 2024; *Alix* 40, 41, 43, 55, 356, 705, 782, 875, 876, 879, 980; *SDom* 607, 756; *Sac* 73; *SMill* 77, 445, 448; *Mil* 73, 304, 495, 703, 841, 861, 908; *Sig* 61; *Duelo* 76, 102.

(impf. ind.) *SDom* 6, 16, 48, 89, 346, 635, 704; *Alix* 154, 161, 210, 217, 356, 390, 565, 673, 858; *Duelo* 67, 112; *Mil* 84, 142, 220, 435, 579, 705, 707, 725, 885, 901; *SMill* 233; *SLaur* 21.

(pret.) *Cid* 2202; *SDom* 163, 766; *Sac* 190; *Aliz* 98, 138, 150, 219, 341, 471, 564, 624, 653, 887, 996; *Loor* 48; *Mil* 348, 461, 901.

(fut.) *Cid* 2862, 3315; *SDom* 186; *Aliz* 95, 140, 966.

(condtl.) *SDom* 8, 74, 751; *Aliz* 278, 673, 945; *Duelo* 130; *Mil* 76, 494, 545.

(pres. subj.) *Sac* 70; *Aliz* 3, 65; *Himnos* 1.6; *SMill* 199.

(impf. subj.) *Alex* 16; *SMill* 402, 585.

(fut. subj.) *SOria* 19.

### **soler.**

This verb is one of the less frequent of the modal auxiliaries. This is probably due to the fact that there were other means of expressing approximately its sense, while in the case of other auxiliaries the sense was unique. Thus the imperfect indicative might be used when no emphasis was needed, and with emphasis *usar* and infinitive, with or without preposition. These agencies doubtless somewhat diminished the frequency of *soler* with infinitive. In the *Sacrificio* it is noted about sixteen times, while in the *Cid* only one instance of it occurs. This shows considerable irregularity in its use by authors of the period. It is noticeable that the present and imperfect indicative are the only tenses represented in these texts (except for one instance of the present subjunctive in *SDom* 177).

(pres. ind.) *Cid* 3380; *SDom* 2, 51, 95, 470, 551, 776; *Duelo* 28; *SOria* 4, 39; *Mil* 141, 149, 704; *SMill* 5, 147, 485.

(impf. ind.) *SDom* 177, 188, 399, 574, 635, 691; *Sac* 6, 51, 114, 134, 149, 231, 233, 336, 396, 465, 476, 514, 719, 737, 738, 878; *SMill* 26, 77, 224, 234, 335.

(pres. subj.) *SDom* 177.

### **THE PURE INFINITIVE WITH VERBS OF WISHING AND LIKING**

15. The strongest of the verbs eligible for this class, *querer*, has already been treated under the modal auxiliaries, but there are several others of slightly varying sense that rightly belong here. *Cobdiçar* and *amar* are the most frequent verbs of the

group, the others appearing only sporadically. It is a striking fact that *cobdiçiar* alone can be used with prepositions, the others being confined to the pure infinitive object. This is not so peculiar when it is considered that the idea of *wishing* naturally takes an object direct rather than through the agency of the preposition, at best slightly roundabout, and it is because of this directness in reaching the object of *wishing* that some verb like *volere*, *quaerere*, has always been considered as a modal auxiliary in each of the Romance languages. It is also true that there is no verb of *wishing* or *liking* listed under the *de*-infinitive except *cobdiçiar* (the nearest being *asmar*, Eng. *aim*). An exceptional case under the pure infinitive is *gozar*, more regular with reflexive pronoun and *de* in the sense of *to enjoy*. It is also noteworthy that *dessear*, which is common later, occurs only twice in our texts.

#### **amar.**

This is the only infinitive construction noted for *amar*.

Non amaba oir palabras de vanidat *Soria* 22  
 amete sienpre laudar e benedeçir *Mil* 522  
 ama lidiar *Cron* 43a3  
 amas derecho departir *Aliz* 349  
 aman vnos a otros escatimas buscar *Aliz* 1796  
 mas aman fer thesoros que vedar estulticia *Aliz* 1800  
 lo aman servir *Aliz* 2314  
 Amaba desti mundo seer desembargado *SMill* 34  
 Bien amarie . . . exir dest exilio de malvezeat poblado *SMill* 34  
 Siempre amé foir esti siglo astroso *SMill* 103

#### **cobdiçiar.**

The infinitives with *de*, *a*, *por*, are also found with *cobdiçiar*.

cobdiçias allá ir *Soria* 158  
 la que yo fer cobdiçio *SDom* 53  
 Qui los regnos agenos cobdiçia conquerir *Aliz* 65  
 Lo que el Padre sancto cobdiçiaua veer *SDom* 488  
 yo beuir non cobdiçio *Aliz* 1684  
 El que perder non teme nin cobdiçia ganar *Aliz* 1917  
 cobdiçian condesar *Aliz* 1917

con mis vasallos cobdiçio yo morir *Aliz* 2132  
 cobdiciariemos ante morir *Cron* 46a28  
 cobdiciaua ya uerse ayuntado con los moros *Cron* 394b19  
 cobdiciaua uer et ser en tal affruenta con Almançor en el campo  
*Cron* 395a3  
 cobdiciando uerter de la sangre de los moros *Cron* 396a13  
 cobdiciando casar con un rey *Cron* 454a18  
 ell cobdiçiendo uenir a la mas alta onrra *Cron* 664b9

An equivalent of *cobdiçar* is the noun locution *auer cobdiça*. Expressions like this usually take *de* to introduce the infinitive, and are common as variants for the simple verbs. The preposition is omitted in:

Sy avedes cobdiça a la tierra tornar *Aliz* 1591  
 Tanto auie grant cobdiça con Poro se fallar *Aliz* 1965

#### **dessear.**

desseando morir por la fe *Cron* 686b27  
 desseando uençer o morir *Cron* 695a10

#### **gozar.**

Used reflexively *gozar* takes the *de*-infinitive in the sense of *to enjoy*.

gozolo oyr *Aliz* 2576

#### **gradar.**

Menéndez Pidal<sup>1</sup> calls this a *verbo auxiliar de modo*, and translates *gradó exir* by *quiso salir*.

gradó exir de la posada *Cid* 200

### THE PURE INFINITIVE WITH VERBS OF THE MENTAL PROCESSES

16. The verbs of this group offer more diversity in sense than is usually desired in classifying instances according to meaning. They do, however, all come under the rather general head of the mental processes. It is evident that any classification ac-

<sup>1</sup> *Cid* II, *gradar*.

cording to meaning is necessarily inaccurate, because verbs do not fall into clear-cut groups but merge one into the other almost imperceptibly, so that a given verb can often be grouped equally well in either of two classes. Evidence of this is at hand in the systems of treatment of this immediate group by various Romance scholars. Dittes, for the Provençal, chooses only *saber*, *jutjar*, and *esperar* for this section while considering verbs of fearing in a group by themselves. Diez<sup>1</sup> with the *verbes de sentiment*, includes *temer*, *creer*, *cuidar*, *desear*, *pretender*, *fingir*, *esperar*. Otto for the Portuguese puts together *die Verben des Denkens, Empfindens und Sagens, sowie bei verbalen Ausdrücken, die "halten für . . . , nehmen für . . . ,"* *bedeuten*. Here he groups verbs like *conhecer*, *crer*, *esperar*, *imaginar*, *confessar*, *jurar*, *negar*, *pedir*, etc. The list that seems most appropriate in Old Spanish includes *asmar*, *cuidar* and *pensar* — which naturally go together as verbs of thinking, — *dennar* (from Latin *dignari* . . . to consider worthy), *esperar*, and the verbs of fearing, *temer* and *dubdar*. It will be seen that these verbs do not so universally take the pure infinitive as the verbs of wishing above. On the contrary, the *de*-infinitive is more common with these verbs of the mental processes than the pure construction. The *relative de* (*in respect to, concerning, in the matter of, relating to*) fits in very well with nearly all the members of the group. *Pensar* almost always takes *de*; *asmar*, *dubdar*, and *temer* take *de* currently; while *cuidar* and *dennar* form exceptions to this usage and remain pure in a great majority of instances.

#### **asmar.**

This verb occurs more often with *de*-infinitive.

Asmaba esconderse en alguna socarrena,  
 Non fer ningun enoio a iantar nin a çena SMill 192  
 asmo fer vna cosa el solo señero Aliz 600  
 Asmo yr prender lengua . . . de las huestes Aliz 601  
 Asmo fer vn castillo Aliz 720

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, p. 209, 6.



asmauan con eso encobrir la çelada *Alix* 730

Asmava el buen omne atravesar la mar *Alix* 2247

Asmo de la primera . . . tornar en Babiloña *Alix* 2438

*Tener* forms an emphatic perfect with the past participle of *asmar* in:

tiene asmado los Infernos proïciar,

a mi con todos vos otros en cadenas echar *Alix* 2418

*cuydar* (cui-, cue-).

Menéndez Pidal lists *cuidar*<sup>1</sup> under the verbs of *entendimiento ó sentido* along with *oir* and *ver*. Though rare with prepositional infinitive, it does occur with *de*, as might be expected from the frequency of *de* with *pensar* and *asmar*, naturally associated with *cuydar*. The *en*-infinitive is also noted with *cuydar* (*en* becomes common with *pensar* later). Thus, though *cuydar* and *pensar* show the effect of influence on each other, each preserves its own predominant type in our texts, *pensar* with *de* and *cuydar* with pure infinitive. Although the two verbs had much the same sense, they were not equivalents (*pensar* had the additional sense of *disponerse a*, *empezar a*, etc.)<sup>2</sup>. Considerable irregularity of use is found in these verbs, some authors using one with great frequency and neglecting the other, and vice versa. Thus *pensar* is extremely common in the *Cid*, but not elsewhere. *Cuydar*, however, is only noted four times in the *Cid*, while in the *Alixandre* there are about seventy recurrences of it. Its proportionate frequency also varies greatly in the other texts examined.

Cuido por esta manna aver delli derecho *SDom* 173

De toda esta coyta cuidaria sanar *SDom* 342

Yo sano e guarido cuidaria tornar *SDom* 476

cuidaban aver el ospedado *SDom* 508

non cueido y pecar *SDom* 581

Cuidaron traer prenda . . . Cuidaron fer ganancia *SDom* 702

cuedandol engannar *Cron* 322b34

<sup>1</sup> *Cid* I, § 160, 4.

<sup>2</sup> For a discussion of these senses, see Menéndez Pidal, *Cid* II, *pensar*.

cuedas reuellar et deffenderte a los alaraues *Cron* 322b44  
 cuedandosse fallar y algunos *Cron* 338b17  
 nin le cuedaua auer *Cron* 344a33  
 non cuydauan beuir mas *Cron* 353b5  
 asi commo el cuydara fazer trayçion a Alhacan *Cron* 358a41  
 nunca a sus tierras cuedauan ya tornar *Cron* 367b20  
 cuedando ya estar en paz *Cron* 371a14  
 por aquella trayçion que cuedauan fazer *Cron* 376b6  
 de lo mio que cuedo fazer *Cron* 401b40  
 Yo cuedaua prender oy a el et a sus cristianos *Cron* 405a44  
 cuedandose alli defender *Cron* 411a17

Also *Cid* 556, 972, 2961, 3011; *SDom* 435; *Sac* 209; *Loor* 46, 223; *Soria* 110, 139; *Mil* 127, 128, 189, 207, 465, 472, 522, 595, 603, 638, 640; *SMill* 13, 82, 196, 262, 270, 453; *Duelo* 96, 139, 161; *Sig* 54; *Aliz* 104, 150, 254, 338, 347, 464, 472, 492, 498, 519, 564, 567, 569, 584, 664, 770, 805, 943, 956, 1001, 1017, 1020, 1102, 1105, 1184, 1195, 1251, 1355, 1397, 1485, 1543, 1544, 1606, 1649, 1655, 1670, 1676, 1730, 1757, 1765, 1766, 1767, 1905, 1920, 2000, 2029, 2037, 2058, 2124, 2155, 2174, 2185, 2234, 2272, 2369, 2372, 2405, 2412, 2426, 2464, 2492, 2503, 2579, 2635; *Cron* 411b48, 414a6, 414a32, 414a36, 414a41, 422b41, 452b29, 461b7, 462a46, 506a38, 507a15, 507a17, 517a28, etc.

### **dennar (-fi-).**

It is noteworthy that this verb is not used in the *Cid* at all, while in the *Milagros* it occurs in seven instances and is found fourteen times in the *Santo Domingo*. I mention these facts to show the lack of uniformity in its appearance in our texts. Considering, as the facts show, that Berceo used *dennar* currently in his poems, it seems strange that if he wrote the *Alizandre*, he allowed it to appear only once in all the 10,000 lines it contains. It will be seen from the examples following that *dennar* was particularly current in prayers to the Creator or to the saints for assistance. Its use was evidently quite restricted at this period and more affected by religious writings than those purely laical. No prepositional constructions are at hand for *dennar*.

sy en algo pecaremos el nos deñe valer *Aliz* 4  
 denna nos defender *Himnos* 3.6  
 miraglos Que dennó Dios al mundo por elli demostrar *SMill* 109  
 dennest prender passion *SMill* 119  
 . . . que nos dennó dñar *SMill* 231  
 . . . Que denne poner termino al nuestro luengo planto *SMill*  
 326  
 denna a mi catar *Duelo* 75  
 Emperadriz gloriosa denna a nos catar *Loor* 221  
 el nos deñe guyar *SDom* 289  
 La su uirtut preciosa que te deño guarir *SDom* 312  
 deña me visitar *SDom* 342  
 fuera que li deñasse Dios los oios abrir *SDom* 346  
 . . . que dennase por elli al Criador rogar *SDom* 427  
 . . . que elli lis deñasse conseio enbiar *SDom* 450  
 Sy tu por mj dennasses una mjssa cantar *SDom* 476  
 deña me guaresçer *SDom* 576  
 deña amj catar *SDom* 649  
 tu deña por ellos aDios merçed pedir *SDom* 764  
 rogamos que deñes delas nuestras pensar *SDom* 766  
 deña nos defender *SDom* 769  
 Denna reçebir, Padre, la nuestra confession *SDom* 771  
 deña por Gonçalo al Criador rogar *SDom* 775  
 miraclo. . . Que por Sancta Maria dennó Dios demostrar *Mil* 75  
 Los que por la Gloriosa denna Dios demostrar *Mil* 235  
 Madre gloriosa dennanos perdonar *Mil* 389  
 de tan grant infamia me dennesti guarir *Mil* 543  
 la gracia que me deñesti fer *Mil* 545  
 li denno valer *Mil* 845, 862

### **pensar.**

The pure infinitive is quite rare with *pensar*, the regular use being with *de*. The infinitives with *a* and *por* are found once each. *Pensar* with pure infinitive shows a great similarity to *cuydar* in the same use, although even here a subtle difference can be noticed. With *de*, however, there is more difference evident, and the *pensar* locution varies from a close approximation of *cuydar* to the sense mentioned by Menéndez Pidal<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Cid* II, *pensar*.

of *disponerse a, empezar a*. In the few examples of pure infinitive with *pensar* following, five instances come from the *Alizandre*.

penso contra el yr *Aliz* 521  
 pensaron a porfidia en los muros sobir *Aliz* 1071  
 penso fer cada vno a dios su peticion *Aliz* 1163  
 . . . pensaron al fer:  
 quando escurescie de biuo lo prender,  
 darlo a Alizandre por mejor lo aver *Aliz* 1680  
 mandaua cridar que pensasen las leys sus casas aguardar *Aliz*  
 2414  
 Pensat, diz Laurençio, tornar del otro lado,  
 Buscat buena pevrada, ca assaz so assado,  
 Pensat de almorzar, ca avredes lazdrado *SLaur* 104

In the last citation above *pensar* and *pensar de* are employed with no perceptible difference of meaning. In the citations from the *Alizandre*, however, the normal sense of *pensar* with pure infinitive is evident.

#### **esperar.**

Without initial *e* this verb appears as *sperar*, also taking pure infinitive object. No prepositional uses occur. The two cases from the *Crónica* both come from the same page, and the use of the first may have caused the use of the second.

qual gualardon espera en cabo rresçebir *Aliz* 1792  
 esperando ell auer el sennorio *Cron* 714a48  
 sperando prender essa cipdad *Cron* 714b9

#### **dubdar.**

The pure infinitive with *dubdar* is rarer than the *de*-infinitive. The construction with *en* occurs once. The ethical dative in reflexive pronoun objects is not noted with *dubdar* and pure infinitive, though it is found with *temer*, a closely related verb. Four of the five examples following are taken from the *Alizandre*. All are negative.

non dubdauan moryr *Aliz* 497  
 non dubdo esperarlo *Aliz* 665  
 non dubdauan morir *Aliz* 1071  
 su aver non dubdan con los pobres partir *Aliz* 2314  
 non dubdan fer peccado *Sig* 42

### temer.

The *de*-infinitive also appears with *temer*, though not so currently as the pure construction. The ethical dative reflexive so common in the passages of the *de*-infinitive with *temer* is rare with the pure use: *temiendose de matarse uno a otro*, Cron 466a15.

non se temia caer *Mil* 547  
 temie de los otros seyer varruntado *Aliz* 1667  
 temien mucho tardar *Aliz* 1722  
 non te temas errar *SDom* 724  
 temia perder el regno *Loor* 36  
 non temo de rriqueza auer nunca fallencia *Aliz* 45  
 temo fer alguno de voluntad pecar *Aliz* 1858  
 El que perder non teme *Aliz* 1917  
 temien anbos veyer la muerte del conpañero *Aliz* 1997  
 temie perder la vida *Aliz* 2065  
 temome a ventura despues ser mal caydo *Aliz* 2228  
 de yra non se temen defender *Aliz* 2349

### OTHER VERBS WITH PURE INFINITIVE OBJECT

17. The verbs of this section are not unified in sense as are those of other groups. The idea of *daring* is present, however, in three (*atreuerse*, *treuerse*, *osar*), and that of *beginning* in two (*començar*, *empeçar*). Prepositional uses of the infinitive are more frequent here than the pure construction. *Osar* is the greatest exception to the versatility of the group, taking only the pure infinitive, and for this reason being classed sometimes as a modal auxiliary.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Menéndez Pidal, *Cid* I, § 160.

**atender.**

atendien el dia del plazo commo quien atiende salir de prision  
*Cron* 587b19

**atreuerse.**

The prepositions *de*, *a* and *en* are also noted with *atreuerse* and infinitive.

ni eran tantos que se atreuiessen salir *Cron* 104a37  
 non se ueyen conpanna de que az de si se atreuiesen fazer  
*Cron* 726b11

**auer mester.**

Such locutions are much more common with *de*-infinitive.

non ouieron mester tomar afan *Cron* 727b24

**çessar.**

This verb more commonly takes *de*-infinitive.

non çessaré nunqua graçias a ti render *Mil* 545

**començar.**

This important verb takes the pure infinitive in 11 instances. Two of these are admittedly doubtful, there being possibility of absorption of the preposition *a* by a juxtaposed *a*, as suggested by Fitz-Gerald.<sup>1</sup> The difficulty is that proof for such voluntary omission seems impossible for these individual instances (see § 45):

començo muy afirmes al Criador rogar *SDom* 450  
 ante començo el la açada buscar *SDom* 726

It is true that absorption of *a* did take place in Old Spanish<sup>2</sup> but the fact that in the very poem offering the doubtful passages an instance of the pure infinitive occurs with *començar*, in which there is no possibility of absorption, since there is no juxtaposed *a*, indicates that to the author the *a* was not a necessary part of the *començar* construction:

començaron los monges las canpanas tañer *SDom* 568

Fitz-Gerald notes this fact, but thinks that the prevalence of the *a* in contemporary use justifies our accepting the doubtful

<sup>1</sup> *Versification of the Cuaderna Via*, p. 50.

<sup>2</sup> Fitz-Gerald, *Vers. Cuad. Via*, pp. 48-52.

instances as cases of absorption. It is evident, however, that if the author did not wish to use the preposition, there was no necessity for his so doing, since other texts offer several additional examples of the pure construction with no possibility of absorption:

- començo darle guerra *Aliz* 402  
 Començol mal traher con palabras yradas *Aliz* 451  
 Començol dar priesa *Aliz* 685  
 començaron guerrear luego *Cron* 219a6  
 començo . . . guerrear a Aragon *Cron* 653b19  
 començaron ordenar commo yrien cercar a Valencia *Cron*  
 605a46  
 obras de piedad que començo y fazer *Cron* 684b32  
 començo yr su uia *Cron* 741a50

It should be remarked as significant that five of these citations come from the *Crónica*, a prose text slightly later than Berceo. Thus neither was the construction with pure infinitive antiquated, nor was *a* here omitted for metrical reasons.

#### **enpeçar (em-).**

This verb is, like *començar*, much more common with *de* and *a*. Of these prepositions, *a* is much more frequently employed than *de*. Six instances of the pure infinitive are listed below, in three of which there is possibility of absorption of *a* (see § 45).

- Enpeçol el maestro al Infant demandar *Aliz* 35  
 enpeço . . . a todos maltraher *Aliz* 2058  
 enpieçan al cresuelo veylar los abezantes *Aliz* 2529  
  
 Empezó en los clerigos fazer grant crueldat *SLaur* 26  
 Ante que empezasse tanner la monedera *Mil* 290  
 Empezó con grant gozo cantar Salve Regina *Mil* 539

#### **ensayar.**

Several examples of *ensayar* with *de*-infinitive occur.

- non . . . ensayaua fazer con ella nada *Cron* 626b42

**guisar.**

This verb is commonly used only as a reflexive. It then takes *por*, *pora*, and *para* with the infinitive in expressions of purpose. As a transitive, it is noted with *pora*-infinitive.

uos guise yo comer *Cron* 135b5  
guisando mantenerle la *Cron* 539a19

**mere(s)çer.**

The pure infinitive is the most frequent with *meresçer*, though examples of the constructions with *a* and *de* occur. It is interesting that it is not noted at all in the *Cid*, and only once in the *Alizandre*.

non meresçe Mesopinia ser oluidado *Aliz* 273  
Non mereçen mis carnes iaçer tan viçiosas *SOria* 130  
mereçie seer levado *Mil* 241  
El mal non mereçiendo seer tan mal iuzgado *Duelo* 48  
Non mereçie seer echado del sagrario *Mil* 107  
Non mereçe entrar *Mil* 245  
Non mereçi seer iaçer *Mil* 277  
el mi buen prez que yo merecia auer *Cron* 39b51  
tu meresciste dexas la locura de los ydolos *Cron* 188a17  
. . . que despues de la muerte meresca seer coronado de Dios  
*Cron* 686a44  
veremos qual de nos meresçe mas traer las ondas *Cron* 763b15  
para meresçer reynar con el *Cron* 771a36  
. . . porque merescamos auer parte con el *Cron* 774b2

**osar.**

The most frequent verb of this section is *osar*. The only striking fact in its syntax is that its union with dependent infinitive is so close that no prepositional constructions are found. For this reason it is sometimes classed as a modal auxiliary (Diez and Menéndez Pidal so class it, but Meyer-Lübke and Otto omit it from their lists of auxiliaries).

non lo osaua catar *Aliz* 36  
non osarie el fillo nunca ally asomar *Aliz* 156  
non las osaron tanner de los pulgares *SDom* 276  
fer non lo osaria *Duelo* 129



non osa ninguno dar salto a la çaga *Cid* 483  
 el otro non gel osó esperar *Cid* 768  
 . . . quomo osas fablar? *Cid* 3328  
 non osaua nadi entrarle fiador *Alex* 229  
 paresçer non osaua ninguno en su derecho *Alix* 517  
 yxir a la batalla ninguno non osaua *Alix* 591  
 Tanto osarien alçar contra uos la çeruiz *Alex* 746  
 non osaremos en ella asomar *Alix* 875  
 pararsely delante ningunos non osauan *Alix* 987  
 el mensajero dezir non lo osaua *Alix* 1231  
 lo que entendemos dezir non lo osamos *Alix* 1252  
 non osaua ninguno tomar arma, *Cron* 520a21  
 non osaua ninguno parecer ant el *Cron* 520a36  
 non les osaua tomar ninguna cosa *Cron* 520a39

Also: *Cid* 30, 44, 64, 1171, 1375, 2890; *Sac* 26, 139; *SDom* 353, 442, 744; *Mil* 88, 380, 791; *Sig* 19, 61; *Loor* 42; *Alix* 1249, 1308, 1310, 1311, 1313, 1596, 2049, 2076, 2146, 2296, 2404, 2409, 2614; *Cron* 522a7, 529a21, 556a51, 556a7, 559a29, 562b42, 563a52, 563b9, 566a15, 566b17, 575a26, 583a21, 583b33.

**treuerse** (-v-).

This verb is treated as a modal auxiliary by Menéndez Pidal<sup>1</sup> because of its similarity to *osar*. *Treuerse* also takes *a* with the infinitive.

Nin se trevien foir *SMill* 452  
 non se treven ganar tanto *Cid* 567  
 arrancar me los trevo con la merçed del Criador *Cid* 2337  
 contra la aguijada çoçear non me treuo *SDom* 102  
 qui pazes te demanda nos treve guerrear *Alix* 1254  
 lidiar nos treuien *Alix* 1996  
 se la non treuie uencer *Cron* 93a50  
 non se le trouo esperar *Cron* 500a3  
 non se treuien ya lidiar con los cristianos *Cron* 529a46  
 et si se treuie lidiar con ellos *Cron* 573a39

**usar.**

Several instances of *a*- and *de*-infinitives with *usar* are noted.

assi como dantigo usaran fazer los godos *Cron* 348a23

<sup>1</sup> *Cid* I, § 160.

THE PURE INFINITIVE AS OBJECT OF FAZER, DEXAR,  
AND MANDAR

18. The infinitive is commonly considered as the object of *fazer*, *dexar*, etc. in such constructions as *fizo lo quedar*. Thus Meyer-Lübke treats it, and with him the majority of Romance scholars. Otto however, following Lücking, destroys the clarity of relation between *fazer* and infinitive by discussing a logical and a grammatical point of view, according to the first of which he takes the infinitive to be a predicate noun in relation to the direct object (generally a pronoun) of *fazer*. Whatever value this subtle complication may have in logic, it has none for this study. I shall, therefore, follow the generally accepted treatment of the phenomenon rather than the ingenious method of Lücking and Otto.

In Old Spanish the regular constructions of *fazer* and infinitive are *fizo lo quedar* and *fizo les fazer cartas*, according as one or two objects are present. Thus the personal object is generally direct if the infinitive has no object expressed, while it is indirect if such an object is present. Exceptions to this treatment will be considered later.

The problem of greatest interest in connection with the *fazer* group, which includes the verbs of sense perception (*ver* and *oyr*), is that of the indirect object of the agent, regular when the infinitive has an object as well as *fazer*. The theory formerly held was due to Tobler,<sup>1</sup> and has been supported by Meyer-Lübke, Körting, Brunot and others. This theory explains the indirect object of the agent with *fazer* and infinitive as due to analogy with the group of verbs taking a direct object of the thing and indirect object of the person. Thus for the French is cited as a parallel construction *j'ordonne à mon ami de faire une démarche*. The indirect is then considered as the normal form of this personal object, and the direct as a later deviation.

Muller<sup>2</sup> successfully combats this position, and shows that

<sup>1</sup> *Verm. Beitr.*, 1, p. 167. See also Hanssen, *Gram.*, p. 256.

<sup>2</sup> "*La Préposition à dans les locutions du type de Faire faire quelque chose à quelqu'un*," Columbia Dissertation, 1912.

the dative here is to be traced back to a variety of the possessive dative in Latin. He quotes Lejay:<sup>1</sup> "Une variété du datif possessif est le datif de l'agent du passif. Il semble qu'à l'origine ce datif, joint à une forme quelconque du passif, n'était pas différent du datif dit d'intérêt." In this connection, compare the Classical Latin use of the dative of the agent in gerundive constructions such as *mihi credendum est*.

A summary of Muller's study follows:

The passive infinitive of transitive verbs was used in Folk Latin with *facere* (in the sense of *jubere*), with the verbs of sense perception, and with verbs of ordering. Examples:

Quatuor arietes occidi fecit, *Vulg., Tob.*, 8, 22  
 Quorum facitis vota compleri, *Epist. ad Justin.*, 10, 8, 2  
 Eum adduci iusserat, *Passion. Leudgar.*, 1, 12

Consequently, the dative of the agent was employed with the passive infinitive in the above constructions:

Sic nos iudicibus ipsum praeceptum relegi fecimus, *Cod. Lon.*,  
 t. IV, p. 259  
 Festivis diebus veniente ad ecclesiam populo fac eis praedicari  
 verbum Dei, *Vit. Vedast.*, 415  
 litteras . . . quas . . . de tribunali populis eas feceris ad-  
 nunciari, *Esp. Sagrad.*, t. V, p. 406  
 Et neque nobis neque ab heredibus nostris presens cartulam  
 posse dirumpi, *Muratori*, t. II, dis. 6, 32, p. 475

With intransitive verbs, the passive infinitive not being available, the regular subject-accusative was used instead of the above dative of the agent.

Stare faciet alios, *Vulg., Job*, 34, 24  
 Ut pervenire facerent ad eum clamorem egeni, *Vulg., Job*,  
 34, 28  
 Et horis aliquot (animal) deambulare facies, *Veg., Ars vet.*, I,  
 54

Muller shows (p. 41) that from about the beginning of the seventh century, the indistinct pronunciation of final un-

<sup>1</sup> In the *Mélanges Havel*, p. 199.

accented vowels caused a confusion between the active and the passive forms of the present infinitive, so that out of the four conjugations, only the third presented even in written texts a distinct passive form. Thus *amare-amari*, *monere-moneri*, and *finire-finiri* became confused, and the active infinitive was substituted in these constructions, which formerly took the passive. But the passive sense still survived in the active form, as is evidenced by the fact that active and passive infinitive appear in the same passages in the same construction, the infinitive of the verbs of the first, second, and fourth conjugations standing in the active form and the infinitive of verbs of the third appearing in the passive, because here phonetic confusion was impossible (*ducere-ducī, occidere-occidī*).

Gestorum veritas quae historiae inseri possit, ad plenum reperire non potest, Fred., 2, 49

Vel quicquid dici aut nominare potest, Marc. Form., II, 4, 77, 8

Nominibus nostris subscribi et confirmare iubemus, Esp. Sagrad., t. XL, p. 382

During the latter part of the eighth century the passive form of the infinitives of the third conjugation is also replaced by the active, though the sense remains unchanged (*fieri*, very significantly, is the latest passive form noted):

Fac fieri quod et ipse jubes miserere rogantis, Drac. Carm. 3, 618

Deprecans ut . . . facere ei júbissemus, Pardessus, 173, 129  
Deinde quodquod volueris scapilatura facere facere fac, Mura-  
tor., t. IV, Dis. 24, p. 683

After the disappearance of the passive infinitive, the dative of the agent is retained with the active infinitive, the passive sense still being felt:

Aperire fecit filiis matris viscera, V. Caes., I, 33

faciat nobis peccata nostra . . . cognoscere, Cap. R. F., t. II, n° 185, 5

Thus the personal indirect object in Romance constructions of the *faire faire* type is the survival of the dative of the agent employed in Folk Latin. The use of *d* with nouns and pronouns to indicate the indirect object is traceable to the general supplanting of the dative by *ad* at the time of the loss of case endings:<sup>1</sup>

Ecclesia beati S. Petri qui ad me fundata est, *C. L.*, t. V,  
939, 695

In Old Spanish, as indeed in Modern Spanish, sentences like *fizolo soterrar* can be understood to have either active or passive sense in the infinitive (if active, *lo* would be the object of *soterrar*). At the present time probably a majority of conscious users of Spanish would not admit the passive force of the infinitive in the construction discussed by Muller. At what time the feeling for the traditional passive was lost, if it has indeed been lost, cannot be determined. A passive sense can, however, be most readily ascribed to the infinitive in phrases of the type *fizolo soterrar*. When the position of the object is after the infinitive (the object here being generally a noun, as in *fizo fer armas*), it often seems a violence to the construction to consider the infinitive as passive. In any case, the position of objects in the following citations permits rather of speculation as to probability, than of certainty, in the matter of active or passive sense in the infinitive. Since the infinitive is active in form, and our period so far removed from that of the passive infinitive in these constructions, it is usually possible to consider the sense, as well as the form, of the infinitive as active.

The most frequent position of the object is between *fazer* and the dependent infinitive. In this position, it seems to me, the infinitive may readily be felt as passive:

fizolos nonbrar *Cid* 1264  
figieronlo damnar *Duelo* 72  
Fizo todos los ninnos de Belleem matar *Duelo* 199  
fizolo enforçar *Aliz* 169

<sup>1</sup> Muller, *Prep. d.*, p. 60.

fizo los huesos en vn fuego echar *Aliz* 169  
 fizolo encantar *Aliz* 395  
 fizo conçeio fer *Aliz* 551  
 fizolas enlazar *Aliz* 644  
 fazial prender biuo *Aliz* 936  
 Fizolo ençender *Mil* 362  
 fizo se ala casa traher *SDom* 391  
 faze los matar *Aliz* 1809  
 . . . fer se llamar señor *Aliz* 2441  
 fizo el templo consagrar *Sac* 68

Also: *Aliz* 666, 792, 857, 867, 889, 915, 1024, 1168, 1197, 1361, 1416, 1536, 1539, 1693, 1783, 1809, 1949, 2367, 2380, 2463, 2629; *Sac* 51, 68, 242; *SDom* 111, 332, 552, 559, 741.

The object also stands commonly between *fazer* and infinitive when the infinitive is intransitive:

fizolo quedar *Aliz* 492  
 non fizolos seyer quedos *Aliz* 499  
 fizo a Lucifer en infierno caer *SMill* 100  
 Fizome . . . entrar *Soria* 149  
 façeslas ir *Himnos* 3.1  
 fizieron los foyr *Aliz* 992  
 fizieron los lazarar *Aliz* 1413

Also: *Aliz* 395, 590, 616, 618, 1278, 1554, 1786, 1808, 1858, 1904, 1991; *Soria* 149; *Sac* 163; *SMill* 250; *SLaur* 1; *Loor* 135.

Examples of the object preceding the *fazer* form, though not rare, are not so numerous as those just discussed. This position also lends itself easily to a passive interpretation of the infinitive:

en vida nos faz juntar *Cid* 365  
 lo farie colgar *Aliz* 761  
 lo fizo en ello comedyr *Aliz* 2432  
 el coral que los rrayos faze bien rreferir *Aliz* 1454  
 lo fizieron atar *Aliz* 1695  
 non se fazien temer *Aliz* 1872  
 Tu la hagas barrer *Mil* 177  
 . . . ques fazie en el mar . . . traher *Aliz* 1426

This position with intransitive infinitives is even more frequent than with transitives:

non lo farian reyr *SDom* 89  
 nos façen peccar *Mil* 121  
 me faga dios morir *Aliz* 1765  
 te fizo Dios de los reys nasçer *Loor* 20  
 dios te faga durar *Aliz* 779  
 el vos faga del mundo seyer enperador *Aliz* 178  
 los fizo quedar *Aliz* 540  
 Sagita que las nuues faz a ssy uenir *Alex* 1454

Also: *Mil* 351, 388, 396; *Aliz* 104, 133, 351, 507, 819, 1046.

The position of the object most naturally used with active infinitive (*fizo fer una capa*) is comparatively frequent in our texts. The fact that with intransitive infinitive this position is quite rare helps to support the theory that the infinitive here actually takes the object. It is significant that all objects discovered in this position are nouns, and are perhaps placed after the infinitive in order not to break the close connection between it and *fazer*. This closeness of relation is hardly disturbed by the use of the pronoun between the two verbs (*fizolo fer*). Meyer-Lübke classes *hacer* as a modal auxiliary along with *dexar*, thus recognizing the close union of *hacer* and dependent infinitive.

. . . por fer matar a Etor *Aliz* 662  
 Faz camiar tu nombre *Aliz* 376  
 fizo rrancar las tiendas *Aliz* 755  
 . . . que faga i cantar mill missas *Cid* 225  
 fizo mio Çid fincar siete tablados *Cid* 2249  
 Fizo en vna carta Dario fer la figura *Aliz* 138  
 Façie pudir la casa *SMil* 184  
 Fizo aparellar toda la cleresçia *Aliz* 1120  
 faze purgar la fenbra *Aliz* 1459  
 Fizo prender dos grifos *Aliz* 2461  
 Fizo fer vna casa *Aliz* 2462  
 Fizo fer vna capa *Aliz* 212  
 fizo el rrey . . . poblar vna rrica çibdat *Aliz* 2073

With intransitive infinitive:

fare venir a Dario merçed a nos pedyr *Aliz* 194

fazen bolar las nuues *Aliz* 686

fazie . . . plorar a sus barones *Aliz* 1770

Only the examples with one object are treated above. These are much more numerous than those having two objects. In the latter cases, the agent is made the indirect object, and the infinitive has a direct object definitely its own. There are so few examples available that little of value can be gained by a study of the position of the objects present, but it is interesting to observe the great variety of arrangements employed:

1. fazen les encorvar . . . las çeruizes *Aliz* 2320
2. fizieselos quitar *Aliz* 1568
3. fizieron lo ellos a los otros leuar *Aliz* 1695
4. fizolo saber luego a sus adelantados *Aliz* 826
5. yo le fare leuar el gato *Aliz* 1270
6. nos faze a todos tan buen padre perder *Aliz* 2619
7. carrera mala le fagamos tomar *Aliz* 2421
8. el que se fazie dios a los omnes dezir *Aliz* 1511
9. no lo pudieron fazer saber a los otros *Cron* 58a54

Of these arrangements, the first and second are much the most frequent, the others occurring only sporadically.

1. faze a las nodrizas auer leyte sobeja *Aliz* 1459
- fazel oluidar la materia *Aliz* 1789
- querria fer a la madre veyer del fio duelo *Aliz* 2532
- fazen al omne fer muyta villania *Aliz* 2356
- fizieron a los romanos saber el danno *Cron* 20a25
- fizoles echar suertes *Cron* 20b38
- fes le entender bien toda tu voluntad *Aliz* 379
- Fizieron les tornar las cuestas *Aliz* 616
- fazial . . . dar vn grito agudo *SDom* 627
- la que face al carro perder el cabezon *Sac* 264
- Façieli el demonio deçir grandes locuras *SMil* 158
- fizoles fazer luego cartas de saluedat *Aliz* 292
- Fizoli despuir la cogulla *Mil* 560
- Fizieronlis deçir toda la pleytesia *Mil* 891
- fazen les encorvar . . . las çeruizes *Aliz* 2320



2. *fazie a los suyos las fronteras rrobar* *Aliz* 857  
*Esta faz a los omnes omezidios obrar* *Aliz* 2346  
*fazeles a las madres los hijos matar* *Aliz* 2346  
*Quiere fer los christianos a Christo denegar* *SLaur* 29  
*Fazieles la grant cueyta el miedo oluidar* *Aliz* 2138  
*faznoslo entender* *SOria* 153  
*enuio al buen Padre fergelo entender* *SDom* 331
3. *faze enamistades a los omnes boluer* *Aliz* 1808  
*faz lo que a nos dizes a ellos entender* *Aliz* 1818  
*Fazelo a los pueblos bendezir e laudar* *Aliz* 2380
5. *Que li fagas cobrar lo que solie aver* *Mil* 738  
*nol pueden fazer comer un muessos de pan* *Cid* 1032  
*querriente fer . . . pechar la molendura* *Aliz* 1342  
*Cueyta me faz prender a mi esta carrera* *Aliz* 2407

There was little irregularity in the use of direct and indirect objects in the *fazer* construction in our texts. Confusion was encouraged by forms doing duty for either direct or indirect object (*me, te, se, nos, vos*, and *a* with nouns and pronouns). On the whole, the regularity of treatment is more remarkable than the exceptions thereto.

One object is present, indirect form:

*le fizo contorçer* *Aliz* 1046  
*fizol amolleçer* *Aliz* 1840  
*fazial prender biuo* *Aliz* 936  
*fizieron les syn grado en las naues entrar* *Aliz* 618

Two objects are present, both direct in form:

*Avn auie el rrey mucho mas que fablar,*  
*metieron todos bozes, fizieronlo la callar* *Aliz* 2273

*El emperador anda por la fe guerrear,*  
*Quiere fer los christianos a Christo denegar* *SLaur* 29

A clause may take the place of the passive object, the agent remaining indirect:

*Fizoles cuemo era la cosa entender* *Alex* 539  
*Fizieron le creyer que lo querien matar* *Aliz* 1881  
*faz lo que a nos dizes a ellos entender* *Aliz* 1818

**dexar, dessar.**

This verb in general follows the treatment of *fazer*, described above. The pronoun object is found, however, somewhat more often preceding *dexar* (*non se dexo caher*, Alix 2071) than between *dexar* and infinitive, the prevailing position with *fazer* (*fizolo fazer*). Thus a very close union is observed between *dexar* and its dependent infinitive, for which reason Meyer-Lübke classes it as a modal auxiliary. Intransitive infinitives are found more often with *dexar* in our texts than transitives.

The object stands before *dexar*, infinitive transitive:

quenlas dexe sacar *Cid* 1277  
 nin nos desses perder *Himnos* 3.6  
 non lo dexo enterrar *Alix* 169  
 non se dexaua echar *Alix* 573  
 Asmaua . . . ques dexasen vençer *Alix* 722  
 por vna mala fenbra se dexo forçar *Alix* 750  
 Por una çeresa se dexa despeñar *Alex* 1763

In the same position, infinitive intransitive:

non lo dexa creçer *Alix* 764  
 dios te dexe beuir *Alix* 20  
 nolo dexo errar *Sac* 190  
 non me dessa falar *Duelo* 146  
 no lo dexaron en su tienda estar *Alex* 1553  
 asi me dexe a España pasar *Alix* 1767  
 non se dexo caher *Alix* 2071

Also: *Alix* 148, 338, 584, 1918, 2252, 2287, 2397; *Mil* 581.

With the object standing between *dexar* and infinitive, transitive infinitives are particularly rare in our texts. These few instances are readily acceptable with passive interpretation of the infinitive (N.B. *matar* as the infinitive).

dexan la pobleçer *Alix* 1848  
 Desose matar *Loor* 91  
 dexose en crux matar *Loor* 135  
 Dexaronse matar *SOria* 81

The infinitive is intransitive:

- déxenvos andar *Cid* 897  
 déxem ir en paz *Cid* 978  
 dexóla creçer *Cid* 3273  
 Dexemos al buen omne folgar en su posada *SDom* 113  
 dessóse morir *Duelo* 108  
 dessades vuestra Madre vevir *Duelo* 125  
 non dexauan las porras seyer de vegar *Aliz* 1737  
 dexolo dios beuir *Aliz* 1356  
 dexarnos ha beuir *Aliz* 2069  
 Quiero dexar al rrey en las naues folgar *Aliz* 2302  
 dexase morir *Aliz* 2367  
 non dexaua las parras llegar a las figeras *Aliz* 2527  
 dexaronlo vivir *Mil* 156

The position in which the object (a noun) follows both verbs is rare:

- Dexó correr un canto *Alex* 557  
 Dexó correr la lança *Alex* 663  
 Non dexedes legar a vos otras compannas *Duelo* 174

One position affected by *dexar*, and lacking for *fazer*, is that in which the infinitive precedes both *dexar* and the object, thus giving the infinitive special emphasis:

- quedar non las dexauan *Aliz* 258  
 rogar non se dexaron mucho los mensageros *SDom* 117  
 . . . que caer non nos dexe en mala temptaçion *Sac* 264  
 morir se dexarie *Aliz* 2539  
 errar non las dexaban *Mil* 8

With two objects present, there is naturally not so great a variety of order shown by *dexar* as by *fazer*, as *dexar* appears only about one-half as often as *fazer* in all uses. The normal *fazer* type (*fizoles echar suertes*, *Cron* 20b38) is strangely lacking in *dexar*. The infinitive regularly stands last.

- non dexes a tus gentes tan grant daño prender *Aliz* 597  
 Déssateme, sennora, los tus pienes tanner *Mil* 488  
 sol non les dexauan la cabeça rrascar *Aliz* 1077  
 Asi me dexe dios mi voluntad conplir *Aliz* 1766

Que me dexe en paz mi rencura decir *Mil* 769  
 valia de vn dinero non li dexan lleuar *Aliz* 1787  
 A nos essa nos desse el Criador usar *Mil* 704  
 nunca gela dexe . . . prouar *Aliz* 2239  
 . . . que nunca nos lo dexe ensayar nin sentir *Aliz* 2401  
 a los judios te dexeste prender *Cid* 347  
 dexósle prender al cuello *Cid* 3339  
 dexosle manear todo a derredor *Aliz* 116  
 nunca dexarla quiso a otri tener *Aliz* 2575

Exceptions to the use of direct and indirect objects are extremely rare:

. . . nol dexassen beuir *Alex* 331  
 non los dexe el miedo su derecho conplir *Aliz* 2056

#### **mandar.**

The first position of the object (*los manda echar*, *Cid* 679), so common with *dezar* and *fazer*, is the least affected by *mandar*. In this position the infinitive is generally susceptible of passive interpretation. In the *Cid*, however, some instances of nouns standing before *mandar* may be considered as inversions of the position naturally assumed when the infinitive has the object (*Mandó librar el canpo*, *Cid* 3693). The inversion would then be made for the sake of the verse, or for emphasis.

pregón mandó echar *Cid* 1187  
 la quinta mandó tomar *Cid* 1216  
 conducho nos mandó dar *Cid* 1409  
 Conduchos largos el rey enbiar mandava *Cid* 1972  
 lo mandara criar *Mil* 569  
 lo mando todo far *Sac* 39

Also: *Cid* 679, 1878; *Loor* 89; *Mil* 233.

With intransitive infinitive:

. . . quel mandasse fablar *Alex* 35  
 a paso las manda yr *Aliz* 74  
 me mandas fincar *SMil* 61

Also: *Aliz* 803; *Mil* 480; *SDom* 89, 341.

The second position of the object (*mandaualo tomar*, Alex 938) is found most frequently with *mandar*, as with *fazer*, and readily permits a passive interpretation of the infinitive.

With transitive infinitive:

mandó mill marcos de plata a San Pero levar *Cid* 1285  
 mandólo recabdar *Cid* 1482  
 mandólo vedar *Cid* 2308  
 mandédesle tomar *Cid* 3515  
 Mando todas sus gentes . . . guarnir *Aliz* 585  
 mando . . . vegalias tener *Aliz* 551  
 mandaua tres ganados offrir *Sac* 73  
 Mandolo luego prender *Aliz* 169  
 al rey Alixandre mandaualo tomar *Aliz* 938  
 mandola . . . destroyr e quemar *Aliz* 1581  
 mando al mensajero . . . rrica albríçia dar *Aliz* 1962  
 mando las calentar *Aliz* 2047  
 mandó ella el ninnuelo levar *Mil* 565  
 Mandól poner a letras *Mil* 577

Also: *Cid* 312, 1013, 1536; *Alex* 776, 779, 792, 938, 1670, 1681, 2049, 2072, 2091, 2154, 2200, 2270, 2274, 2367, 2404, 2584.

With intransitive infinitive:

Mandólos venir a la corth *Cid* 1263  
 a todos los sos estar los mandó *Cid* 2017  
 mandáronle ir adelante *Cid* 2766  
 mando lo yr *SDom* 19  
 manda amj alla entrar *SDom* 341  
 mando todos los monges uenjr al parlatorio *SDom* 447  
 Mandolis atender *Mil* 88  
 mandolas seyer quedas *Aliz* 963

Also: *Sac* 125; *Aliz* 963, 1267, 1575, 1631, 1953; *SMill* 5; *Loor* 144.

The word order most naturally employed when the infinitive takes the object is especially frequent with *mandar* (*mando*

*traher el agua*, SDom 394). This position of the object appeared less often than any other with *fazer*, while with *dexar* the number of instances was so small as to be negligible. The object here is found to be a noun in all the instances noted. This was probably quite as much a determining factor as any consciousness of the relation between infinitive and object, since the pronoun did not break the close connection of conjugated verb and infinitive object nearly so much as did the noun (*mandaualo tomar* and *mando todos los monges uenjr*, Alix 938 and SDom 447).

- Mandad coger la tienda Cid 208  
 mandó veer sus yentes mio Cid Cid 417  
 Mandó partir tod aqueste aver Cid 510  
 mandó tornar la seña Cid 596  
 . . . que mandasse reçebir a esta conpañia Cid 1829  
 Mandaron cargar las azémilas Cid 2705  
 Mandó fazer candelas Cid 3055  
 mando traher el agua SDom 394  
 Mandó çebar al pobre Loor 50  
 Mandó creer un Dios Loor 88  
 Manda llamar los clerigos Soria 193  
 mando feryr pregones Alix 418, 437  
 mando pregonar Etor conçeio general Alix 578  
 mando mouer las hurestes, prender otras posadas Alix 304  
 Mando fer vnas letras Alix 762  
 Mando luego el rrey prender los mensaieros Alix 776  
 mandaron fer apriesa . . . saetas e quadrillos Alix 1074  
 mando tañer las tronpas e feryr las bozinas Alix 1275  
 mando prender . . . la su mesnada clara Alix 1328  
 mando traher las parias Alix 2560  
 mando fer el buen rey conçeio general Alix 2502  
 mando alçar los fumos Alix 2444  
 Mando poner la cadiella . . . Alix 1819  
 mandó . . . façer muy grant foguera Mil 848  
 Mandó tener a todos los dessa mayson SMill 189

A number of instances of *mandar* are noted with no object other than the infinitive expressed:

mando caualgar *Aliz* 938, 1115, 1870  
 Mando ally cauar *Aliz* 1152  
 Mando luego mouer *Aliz* 1275  
 mandaua cridar que . . . *Aliz* 2414 (*que* clause replacing object)  
 mandedes ensellar *Cid* 317

With two objects present, *mandar* shows several varieties of word order, the most frequent having both objects between *mandar* and its infinitive (thus permitting the infinitive to carry the rhyme):

mando luego a las compannas tomar sus armas *Cron* 71b49  
 mandoli tomar ordenes *SDom* 42  
 Mandástesme mover a Bavioca *Cid* 3513  
 mandaron les fazer cada unos sus sennales *Cron* 99b6  
 Mandádnolo ferir *Cid* 2364  
 mando [al] chancellor las letras escreuir *Aliz* 792  
 Mando a todos muchas de las cañas prender *Aliz* 2154  
 Mandó a los ministros la casulla traer *Mil* 71  
 mándovos los cuorpos ondradamiente vestir *Cid* 1871  
 Mandote cada dia un salmo reçitar *Mil* 262  
 Mandogelas . . . levar *Mil* 400  
 a todos sos varones mandó fazer una cárcava *Cid* 561  
 mando toller las armas a la gent suya lazrada *Aliz* 1059  
 mando fincar las tiendas al su pueblo lazrado *Aliz* 1892  
 Mandó mouer las naues á los naueadores *Alex* 228  
 Otro procurador non me mandes buscar *Mil* 797  
 Mandaron el caualllo a Dario caualgar *Aliz* 1720  
 Mandóla a los angeles prender *Mil* 533  
 Mando luego la carta ditar al chançeller *Aliz* 1963  
 lei lis mandaba tal sacrilegio far *Duelo* 31

*Que* acts as one of the objects in:

Sin muchas romerias que lis mandó andar *Mil* 400  
 Sin muchas oraçiones que lis mandó rezar *Mil* 400  
 Al que Sancta Maria lo mandó maestrar *Mil* 494  
 Quanto que Xpo manda creer a xpiano *Mil* 795

*Le* and *lis* are used instead of *lo* and *los* (one object only present):

mandáronle ir adelante *Cid* 2766  
 mandédesle tomar *Cid* 3515  
 . . . quel mandasse fablar *Alex* 35  
 mandol enpeçar *Aliz* 36  
 mandolis atender *Mil* 88  
 Mandole . . . yr *Aliz* 1575

#### THE PURE INFINITIVE WITH VERBS OF SENSE PERCEPTION

19. Muller shows that in Folk Latin these verbs received in general the same treatment as *fazer*, taking the passive infinitive, and with it the dative of the agent or *ab* with the ablative: *videret exercitum . . . ab his cingi . . .*, Esp. Sagrad., t. VI, p. 552.

The active infinitive is found later with passive sense: *Et quidquid inibi Estiva conjugii meae habere videntur*, C. L., t. V, 906, 504.

In this section will be treated only *oyr* and *ver* for Old Spanish. Menéndez Pidal<sup>1</sup> classes *cuidar* with *ver* and *oyr*. This verb is better treated, however, under the group dealing with the mental processes, since its sense is much closer to that of *pensar* and *asmar* than to that of *oyr* and *ver*. *Oyr* occurs but rarely in comparison with *ver*.

#### *oyr*.

This verb conforms to the conditions stated above for *fazer*. All positions of the object are found with *oyr*, though in few instances each.

The object precedes *oyr*:

las oy yo tanner *SMill* 487  
 sy lo oyestes contar *Aliz* 344, 999  
 sil oviestes contar *Cid* 2314

The object intervenes between *oyr* and the infinitive:

oyeron las gentes de la fuente rretraher *Aliz* 2137  
 Oyeron un sonido del çielo desçender *Loor* 155; also *Sac*  
 125, 285

<sup>1</sup> *Cid* I, § 160, 4.



The object follows both verb forms in *SDom* 592, although here the infinitive is intransitive:

udio del buen confessor andar estos roydos

There are two objects present:

Odiemoslo dezir a los mas ançianos *SMill* 404

tu muert odi conssejar a ifantes de Carrión *Cid* 2670

a Isayas creo que las oy dezir *Loor* 96

*Oyr* is not infrequent without object, or with a *que* clause replacing the object:

Siempre oy dezir que . . . *SMill* 121

si oyestes contar . . . *SDom* 187

oyo dezir por nuebas dessa enfermedat *SDom* 405

nunca fablar odiestes de otros tan arteros *SDom* 479

commo odredes contar *Cid* 684

como oyemos dezir *Alx* 2271

**ver, veer, veder (u-).**

The best example of infinitives used with *ver* is found in *Cid* 726-730:

Veriedes tantas lanças premer e alçar,  
tanta adágara foradar e passar,  
tanta loriga falssar e desmanchar,  
tantos pendones blancos salir vermejos en sangre,  
tantos buenos cavallos sin sos dueños andar

and in *Cid* 1966-1969:

¿quién vido por Castiella tanta mula preçiada,  
e tanto palafre que bien anda,  
cavallos gruessos e corredores sin falla,  
tanto buen pendón meter en buenas astas, etc.

In these passages the comparatively detached condition of the infinitives is conspicuous. This will also be evident in many of the examples following. The union of the infinitive object with *oyr* and *ver* was clearly much looser than with *fazer*, etc. This will be further brought out in the discussion of passages having two objects. It is likewise to be noted that transitive infinitives with *ver* are rare.

The object precedes *ver*:

Tres reyes veo de moros derredor de mí estar *Cid* 637  
 quandol vieron assomar *Cid* 1393  
 por que me veades lidiar *Cid* 1653  
 tanto braço con loriga veriedes caer a part,  
 . . . cavallos sin dueños salir a todas partes *Cid* 2406  
 lo vieron entrar *Cid* 3107  
 le veo lazarar *Loor* 89  
 Todas estas mezquindades que te veo sufrir *Loor* 96  
 los veyen groñir *Aliz* 2049

Also: *Cid* 1141, 1645; *SOria* 86; *Aliz* 449, 465, 673, 1230, 1330, 1859, 1975, 2042, 2049, 2165, 2234.

The object stands between *ver* and the infinitive:

Si viéredes yentes venir *Cid* 388  
 Mala cueta es . . . fijos e mugieres veer los murir de fanbre  
*Cid* 1179  
 Veriedes cavalleros venir de todas partes *Cid* 1415  
 veerme an lidiar *Cid* 1641  
 Víolos venir *Cid* 2772  
 uio al diçiplo seyer tan sin color *Aliz* 34  
 vio vna serpiente con dos aguilas lidiar *Aliz* 390  
 veo aSant Martin cerca de mj estar *SDom* 695  
 Veol por mi morir *Loor* 78

Other examples of this position: *Cid* 919, 1141, 1393, 1645, 1653, 2400, 2413; *SOria* 142; *Aliz* 55, 524, 1091, 1397, 1824, 1967, 2071, 2203, 2210, 2366, 2468, 2469, 2568; *SMill* 357; *SLaur* 63; *Loor* 173, 179; *Mil* 279, 490, 598, 599, 600, 674; *Duelo* 48; *Sig* 19; *SDom* 393, 644.

The object stands after the infinitive (even here the transitive infinitive is rarely met):

Quando vido mio Çid asomar a Minaya *Cid* 919  
 veriedes crebar tantas cuerdas *Cid* 2400  
 vido venir a Dïago e a Fernando *Cid* 2440  
 . . . fasta que viesse venir sus primas amas a dos *Cid* 2770  
 Vio arder la lámpada *SMill* 335  
 Vedia correr sangre *Duelo* 49  
 Vido sobir los angeles *SOria* 42

Also: *Aliz* 2320, 2467; *Loor* 136, 210; *Mil* 592, 604, 734.

*Ver* and infinitive, when two objects are present, depart from the closely observed custom with *fazer*, etc. of making the agent the indirect object instead of the direct.

Veriedes cavalleros, que bien andantes son,  
besar las manos, espedirse de rey Alfons *Cid* 2159

Here the intervention of a *que* clause between *cavalleros* and *besar* may have made *Veriedes cavalleros* sufficiently independent so that the presence of the second object *manos* was neglected. The same condition is noted in *Cid* 1228, where *barata* is made the actual object of *ver* and the construction is split, both intended objects being made direct:

en el passar de Xucar i veriédés barata,  
moros en arruenço amidos beber agua

The *Cid* also apparently neglects the presence of *se* as an object, and makes the agent with *ver* direct, whether such an agent is personal or not:

Aquí veriedes quexarse ifantes de Carrión! *Cid* 3207  
veriedes armarse moros *Cid* 697  
veriedes . . . arrancarse las estacas e acostarse los tendales  
*Cid* 2400

Accepted instances of regularity are noted in:

Todas estas mezquindades que te veo sufrir *Loor* 96  
veye al proximo bien aver o liticia *Aliz* 2329

Even these are not entirely satisfactory as examples of regular treatment, since in the first case the personal object *te*, and in the second *al proximo*, can hardly be considered more definitely indirect in form than direct.

Thus out of 7 instances of *ver* and infinitive with two objects, it is shown that none is a perfect case of regularity according to the use of objects with *fazer*, while at least 5 are definitely exceptions to such use. It is evident, therefore, that *ver* had by this time departed considerably from the use of the group with which it had been associated in the Vulgar Latin period.

Doubtless this condition accompanied the looseness of construction that is to be noted in so many of the citations above. The dependence of the infinitive on *ver* being so slight as to permit whole clauses to intervene, a resultant laxness in the use of direct and indirect objects is only to be expected, since a consciousness of the principle involved would vary almost in proportion to the closeness of construction.

As the one object present, *le* is used in:

El que manda todo esto por mi le veo lazarar *Loor* 89

quandol vió venir *Loor* 44

Veol por mi morir *Loor* 78

quandol vieron assomar *Cid* 1393

The use of the personal *a* is interesting in *Verán a las estrellas caer de su logar*, Sig 19.

#### THE PURE INFINITIVE WITH VERBS OF PERMITTING AND FORBIDDING

20. The members of this group are in sense closely related to the *fazer* group just discussed. In syntactical treatment they resemble rather the verbs taking the ordinary construction of indirect object of person and direct object of thing: *otorgouos lo yo*, Alix 1590. There are not enough instances of any of these verbs, however, to permit any detailed study of them, since none occurs more than twice. *Consentir* alone is found with the regular two objects present. *Dexa* might well replace *Lexa* in *Lexa estar*, Cron 43b35. For the *de*-infinitive with this group, see p. 129.

**comendar.**

comiendo la my madre servirla *Alix* 2599

**consentir.**

The prepositional infinitives with *de* and *en* are also noted with *consentir*.

non les consintie fer las cosas vedadas *Mil* 510

consentielis en cabo cumplir sus voluntades *Alix* 2571

**lexar** (probably has the same provenience as *dexar*: see Körting, *Lat. rom. Wörterbuch*, 2910, 5491; Gröber, *Arch. für lat. Lex.*, III, pp. 509, 510; Meyer-Lübke, *Gram.*, p. 417).

The preposition *de* may introduce the infinitive with *lexar*.

*Lexa estar Cron 43b35*

**sufrir.**

comme la deslealdat et la suziedat de aquella yente desleal lo  
sufre seer entre si *Cron 721b48*

**vedar.**

viédales exir e viédales entrar *Cid 1205*  
viedanos él matar *Loor 89*

#### THE PURE INFINITIVE WITH VERBS OF MOTION

21. Lachmund<sup>1</sup> discusses the pure infinitive with the verbs of motion thus: "Am reinsten hat sich der reine Infinitiv in seiner ursprünglichen Bedeutung und Stellung erhalten bei den Verba der Bewegung . . . Der Infinitiv steht hier zur Bezeichnung des Zwecks." Although a literal interpretation of the first statement would not be quite accurate, since the purest use of the pure infinitive is rather that of subject or object, at which times it most clearly shows its dual nature of noun and verb, in the main Lachmund's points are well made. Meyer-Lübke<sup>2</sup> shows that *ire* and *venire* could take the pure infinitive in Latin, and that thus used it expressed goal. From its current appearance with *ire* and *venire*, the most common verbs of motion, it spread to the other verbs of the group until in Old Spanish it became one of the most frequent of the infinitive constructions. Not merely were other intransitive verbs of motion affected, but also transitives (*enbiar*, *dereçer*, *guiar*) and reflexives (*adelantarse*, *levantarse*, etc.). By analogy with these, the pure infinitive might be used with such reflexives as *trabaiarse*, where the concept of

<sup>1</sup> *Ueber den Gebrauch des reinen und präpositionalen Infinitivs im Alt-französischen*, p. 5. See also Hanssen, *Gram.*, p. 253.

<sup>2</sup> *Gram.* III, § 503.

motion was figurative and remote. *Goal* is the function naturally ascribed to the infinitive with verbs of motion (see Lachmund and Meyer-Lübke above), since *motion* implies a *goal*; yet it should be noted that this concept delicately merges into that of *purpose*. A predominance of one or the other, however, is usually not difficult to sense (e.g. *goal* in *Vayamos posar*, Cid 1531, and *purpose* in *descendio morar a los llanos*, Cron 467b50. This *purpose* sense in the pure infinitive permits clausal dependence in such cases as *descendio al Infierno su pleitó rrecabdar*, Alix 2311; *Por entrar a la missa la confession fazer*, Mil 71; for instances with *a*, *por*, *pora* and *para* see pp. 159, 209, 233, 235. The same conditions are noted in these verbs with the *a*-infinitive, for the construction with *a* came gradually to replace the pure infinitive in these uses. Even at the period of our texts the class with *a* is considerably the larger, though all the common verbs of motion take both modes of expression (*descender*, *entrar*, *exir*, *yr*, *tornar*, *venir*, etc.). Probably the reason why the pure infinitive came to be abandoned by this group except with the most frequent verbs was the fact that the pure infinitive was not definite, while the construction with *a* was both definite and emphatic. Confusion was conceivable with the pure construction, but with *a* practically the only senses that could be expressed were the very ones associated with these verbs (*goal* and *purpose*).

(a) *Intransitive Verbs*

**descender.**

This verb also takes *a*, *por* and *pora* with the infinitive. More of purpose than of goal is expressed here:

*descendio morar a los llanos* Cron 467b50

**entrar.**

The infinitives with *a*, *por*, *pora* and *para* are also noted with *entrar*.

*Ante que a las parias entremos rescebir* Alix 2503

*Entró el sacristano el sepulcro catar* SMil 335

*Entró fer oraçion el novio refrescado* Mil 338

*Al Criador rogar* not infrequently depends on a *goal* clause:

El padre cordoioso entró a su altar,  
 como era usado al criador rogar *SDom* 366  
 Entró a la iglesia al Criador rogar *SDom* 425  
 entro el ala iglesia, al Criador rogar *SDom* 300

### **exir.**

The prepositions *a* and *por* are also found with *exir* and infinitive.

exien lo veer mugieres e varones *Cid* 16

### **yr.**

The most frequent verb of motion in Old Spanish is *yr*. Mentioned by Meyer-Lübke along with *venir* as being the starting-point for the development of the pure infinitive with verbs of motion in Latin, it maintained, if it did not increase, the varieties of its usefulness. It occurs commonly in all texts and takes all the prepositions that express *goal* or *purpose* (*a*, *por*, *pora*, *para*). Menéndez Pidal, after pointing out that verbs of motion, now regularly requiring a preposition, were used in the *Cid* with pure infinitive, states that from indicating motion toward something *ir* came to express *intention* like *querer*. He further says that *la manol va besar*, *Cid* 369, is in sense identical with *quísol besar las manos*, *Cid* 265. From this point the *yr* construction becomes for Menéndez Pidal a useless paraphrase, because "no supone que el deseo deje de estar seguido de la realización del acto deseado, sino generalmente lo contrario."<sup>1</sup>

The main steps in the weakening of *yr* are well brought out by Menéndez Pidal, but the statement that the *yr* construction becomes a useless paraphrase, which he also remarks for *querer*, *mandar*, *fazer*, *tornar* and others, appears too sweeping to be valid. According to this point of view it would seem that, as soon as an infinitive construction becomes especially frequent, it degenerates into uselessness. The difference between complete and almost complete disappearance of sense in *yr* with

<sup>1</sup> *Cid* I, § 160.

infinitive is probably just the difference between almost complete and complete accuracy in Menéndez Pidal's remark. Why should not some slight sense of *yr* remain in even the weakest of its uses? The same scholar says that *vayamos caualgar* is equivalent to *cavalguemos*, and *vayades passar* to *passedes*.<sup>1</sup> A similar and quite as current a construction is at hand in the French *allons chanter*. But *allons chanter* is not exactly equivalent to *chantons* any more than *vayamos caualgar* is exactly equivalent to *cavalguemos*. If nothing more, *vayamos* and *allons* give an emphasis, a force, an *inception* to the action that is quite lost in the simple imperative. If the language were to be denuded of such expressions as this, in which the original strength has been largely lost, many fine and delicate shades of thought would have to go with them because of the lack of an appropriate vehicle. The above is not intended as a criticism of Menéndez Pidal's main points, but merely as a suggestion against a too literal interpretation of his statements concerning equivalence.

It is interesting to note that *andar*, which is in modern times naturally associated with *yr*, does not occur with pure infinitive object in the texts studied, and only rarely with *a*.

The presence of the reflexive pronoun with normally intransitive verbs of motion is to be occasionally remarked (cf. *Cid* 772: *El rey Fariz en Teruel se fue entrar*).

Examples of *yr* and infinitive:

- la manol ban besar *Cid* 298
- El Çid a doña Ximena fvala abraçar *Cid* 368
- ellos ivan posar *Cid* 415
- vayámoslos ferir *Cid* 676
- la seña va tomar *Cid* 692
- indos conseguir *Cid* 833
- id a mio Çid buscar *Cid* 898
- valo abraçar sin falla *Cid* 920
- hiremos veer aquella su almofalla *Cid* 1124
- quien quiere ir comigo çercar a Valençia *Cid* 1192

<sup>1</sup> *Cid* I, § 160, 3.



vos fdgelos levar *Cid* 1274  
 vos vayades passar *Cid* 1462  
 Vayamos posar *Cid* 1531  
 hir los hemos fferir *Cid* 1690  
 Mandaronme que fuese albergar con Johan *Duelo* 159  
 Nin vaian esta noche visitar las uxores *Duelo* 175  
 Fueron abrazarla *SOria* 64  
 Yt arder en el fuego *Sig* 32  
 Vaia yaçer con Iudas *Mil* 245  
 Iba . . . la esposa prender *Mil* 336  
 mando lo yr el padre las oueias guardar *SDom* 19  
 yre buscar do biua contra Estremadura *SDom* 180  
 Fue aSancto Domjngo merçed li demandar *SDom* 579  
 a Dios se fo acomendar *Cid* 411  
 fústed meter tras la viga lagar *Cid* 3365  
 fo besar la mano a so señor Alfons *Cid* 3512

Also: *Cid* 369, 400, 401, 402, 547, 553, 655, 694, 707, 718, 752, 1137, 1203, 1369, 1505, 1516, 1628, 1696, 1718, 1762, 1951, 2092, 2216, 2235, 2328, 2381, 2384, 2395, 2627, 2653, 2672, 2817, 2858, 2876, 2879, 2888, 3021, 3053, 3318, 3361, 3572; *Alix* 165, 174, 284, 386, 419, 464, 514, 562, 572, 623, 665, 677, 755, 803, 875, 986, 997, 1072, 1089, 1091, 1110, 1115, 1120, 1127, 1136, 1166, 1278, 1316, 1360, 1528, 1541, 1552, 1664, 1690, 1702, 1704, 1756, 1789, 1859, 1899, 1920, 1925, 1947, 2179, 2613, 2627, 2628; *Mil* 343, 398, 400, 546, 547, 636, 654, 691, 730, 732, 759, 760, 761, 819, 840; *SOria* 123; *SDom* 97, 559, 574; *SLaur* 29, 33; *SMill* 5, 140, 192, 231, 234, 272, 278, 352, 356, 417; *Cron* 4b54, 9a18, 10a45, 10b50, 13b28, 14a10, 14b33, 16b22, etc., etc.

### **llegar.**

The pure infinitive is found with *llegar* only once, while the prepositional constructions with *a* and *pora* are not infrequent. *Llegar* had a successful rival in *uuiar* which took the pure infinitive regularly and with approximately the same sense (cf. *uuiar* below). There may be absorption of *a* by *ayudar* in this case:

lleo ayudar a sacar el cuerpo (ref. lost)

**pasar.**

Other infinitive constructions of *pasar* have *a*, *por* and *pora*. It is not frequent in any construction.

*pasaron veer los de la otra parte* *Cron* 766b11

**sal(1)ir.**

The most noteworthy fact concerning *salir* is the predominance of the locution *salir reęibir*. Other infinitives are rare. This locution also occurs commonly with *a*. In general use *salir* takes *a*, *por* and *pora* with its infinitive.

*reęibirlos sale* *Cid* 297

*Saliólos reęibir* *Cid* 487

*Saliólos reęibir* *Cid* 1478

*reęibir salien las dueñas* *Cid* 1583

*reęibir lo salen* *Cid* 2015

*saliólos reęibir* *Cid* 2849

*Salieron reęibirla* *SOria* 63

*Salieron reęibirla* *SOria* 64

*sallieron rreęibir lo* *Alex* 1516

*salleron rreęibir lo* *Alex* 1518

*salieron los reęibir* *Cron* 221b26.

**Other locutions than *salir reęibir*:**

*salieron lidiar con los romanos* *Cron* 30a53

*salgamos lidiar* *Cron* 596a39

*le saldre yo dar fazienda* *Cron* 605a33

*salieran correr* *Cron* 743b52

**tornar.**

The prepositions *a*, *por*, *pora* and *para* are found with *tornar* and infinitive. Menéndez Pidal states<sup>1</sup> that “*tornar* no expresa, como propiamente debiera, un sentido iterativo, y no da matiz alguno especial al verbo simple.” Exception might be taken to the words “como propiamente debiera” (since *tornar* may express *to turn* or *to return to the doing*), and to “no da matiz alguno . . .” The same reasoning applies to *tornar* as to *yr* above, concerning which Menéndez Pidal

<sup>1</sup> *Cid* I, § 160, [2].

says approximately the same thing. The *iterative* sense is clear in *Cron* 270a5: *pidiol quel diesse cavalleros con que tornasse otra vez lidiar con aquellos reuellados*.

**(h)uuiar, vuiar.**

This verb, as an intransitive, is a rival of *llegar* with infinitive, and is assigned the sense of the latter by Menéndez Pidal.<sup>1</sup> Like *llegar* it also takes the infinitive with *a* (cf. French related locution *arriver à* with infinitive). Like *mouer*, it is also used as a transitive and reflexive (in the sense of *to aid*, etc.). It is a notable fact that only the *Alizandre* and the *Crónica* yield examples of *uuiar* and infinitive. In instances such as *apenas lo uuiauan saber aquellos contra que yuan ni apercebir se dello*, *Cron* 45b40, it is evidently the infinitive that takes the object, and not *uuiar*, in spite of the juxtaposition of the latter.

el no la uuió acabar ante de su muert *Cron* 9b13  
 no lo uuiara complir *Cron* 39a53  
 apenas lo uuiauan saber aquellos contra que yuan ni apercebir  
 se dello *Cron* 45b40  
 no lo uuiaron saber las gentes *Cron* 45b52  
 non gelo uuiaran fazer saber *Cron* 49b6  
 ante que lo uuiasse fazer, lleo poder de Costantino *Cron* 181b12  
 uuió escapar *Cron* 330a31  
 huuiaron uenir *Cron* 445b46  
 ante que la hueste . . . huuiasse posar nin llegar *Cron* 456b6  
 se non huuió el componer pora salir a ellos *Cron* 468a24  
 ante que la mano huuiasse llegar al Çid *Cron* 642b28  
 non huuiaron alcançar fuera *Cron* 759b52  
 abes vuiauan Atrouos los fillos desordir *Aliz* 1103  
 en Bracta vuiaron asomar *Aliz* 2164  
 ante que los vuiase ihu xristo saluar *Aliz* 2400

Also: *Cron* 96b44, 637b23, 744b53, 745a18, 753b25, 756b3, 757a2, 764b40, 765a1, 765a35, 765a37.

**venir (u-).**

As mentioned above, *venire* shared with *ire* the distinction of being the starting point of the infinitive construction with

<sup>1</sup> *Cid* II, *huuiar*.

verbs of motion. In Old Spanish these two verbs are still the most frequent and representative members of their group. Considerably less weakening of sense is to be noted in *venir* with infinitive than in *yr*, discussed above. The essential difference between the two verbs was not always rigidly observed however.<sup>1</sup> The prepositional constructions with *a*, *por*, and *pora* are found with *venir*.

te vinieron adorar *Cid* 336  
 Vino mio Cid yazer a Spinaz de Can *Cid* 393  
 vino posar sobre Alcoçer *Cid* 630  
 los uino saluar *Sac* 53  
 vinieron grandes gentes la fiesta çelebrar *Sac* 68  
 yo ati vin buscar *SDom* 341  
 me ujenes guarir *SDom* 658  
 nos vino salvar *SOria* 1  
 vinolo combidar *Mil* 134  
 Ven tastar *Mil* 730  
 Tienpo serie e ora que nos vengas valer *Aliz* 597  
 vino al rrey colpar *Aliz* 2029  
 venie beuer al rrio *Aliz* 2159  
 vinieron todas veyerlo *Aliz* 2301  
 vienelo rreçebir *Aliz* 2367  
 los antipades quiere venir buscar *Aliz* 2418  
 Vynien çecar a Troya *Aliz* 2536  
 vinie rrobar el mundo *Aliz* 2566

Also: *Cid* 532, 644, 646, 651, 981, 1071, 1076, 1099, 1105, 1183, 1208, 1224, 1475, 1476, 1498, 2312, 2371, 3114b, 3131; *Duelo* 102; *SOria* 33, 132, 142, 150, 193; *Loor* 3; *Sac* 271, 289; *SDom* 362, 427, 618; *Mil* 512, 738, 862; *SMill* 17, 286, 307, 398, 454; *SLaur* 84; *Aliz* 194, 217, 264, 695, 747, 929, 931, 1210, 1738, 1863, 1864.

#### (b) *Transitive Verbs*

In Otto's study, these verbs do not form a group by themselves. It seems evident, however, that to make the groups already treated under the pure infinitive object absorb even

<sup>1</sup> See Menéndez Pidal, *Cid* II, *venir*.

these few verbs would be doing violence to the syntactical uses of those groups. With the following verbs the infinitive expresses clearly the concept of *goal*, a concept which in some instances merges into that of *purpose*, but which is quite distinct from that of object with verbs of *wishing*, *permitting*, etc., etc. There may be two objects present, as in the *fazer* group, but there is always this concept of *goal* to be felt, which is entirely lacking in the *fazer* construction. Thus the function of the infinitive with these transitives is found to be the same as with the intransitives just discussed (e.g. *goal* being equally evident in *enuiaronlo dezir*, Cron 374a17, and in *vayamoslos ferir*, Cid 676).

The verbs of this group also take *a*, *pora* and *para* with the infinitive. *Pora* and *para* give an increased sense of *purpose* or *goal*, but *a* adds little not already present in the pure infinitive (*Enbio end poderes . . . conqueryr Capadoçia*, Alix 821; *quando alguno enuiauan a conquerir tierra*, Cron 24b1; . . . *quel enbiassen ballesteros et peones pora combater a Valencia*, Cron 576a22). The prepositional construction is more frequent with these transitive verbs of motion than that without preposition.

#### **aiudar (ay-).**

*Pora*-infinitive also occurs with *aiudar*, but the most frequent construction has *a*. Possibility of absorption of *a* is to be noted in these two cases:

Si Dios nos aiudara fer una remembranza *Duelo* 44  
 si aquel fecho le ayudassen acabar *Cron* 584b14

#### **dereçer.**

The possibility of *a embedida* in this example is also evident (though no cases of *dereçer a* with infinitive are at hand):

tan bien me dereçeste mi cosa acabar *Alix* 2563

#### **enbiar (emb-, env-, enu-).**

This is the most current verb of the transitive class. The basic concept of *goal* imperceptibly merges into that of *purpose*

(*enuiolo dezir a su hermano*, Cron 251a52, and *los enuio Cristo semnar la bendición*, Sac 41). Generally more of *purpose* is to be felt than of *goal*, however. The locution *enbiar dezir* is especially common without specific agent and with the passive object (often *lo*, referring to something already mentioned) standing between *enbiar* and the infinitive: *Pues que el ouo esto fecho enbiolo dezir a Alhacan*, Cron 351b41. *Enbiar* also takes *a*, *por* and *pora* with the infinitive.

Enbio end poderes . . . conquerr Capadoçia *Aliz* 821  
 Embio sue fazienda dezir a castellanos *SMill* 413  
 Embio un su omne . . . Aduçir los vestidos *SDom* 482  
 Envio dos calonges . . . Probar esto *Mil* 568  
 Embio esso misme deçir a alaveses *SMill* 414  
 enuiaronlo assi dezir a Theoderico . . . *Cron* 243a46  
 enuio el rey Amalarigo dezir all emperador . . . *Cron* 251b25  
 enuiaronlo dezir a Bernaldo *Cron* 374a17  
 enuiaronlo dezir al rey *Cron* 375a25

Also: *Cron* 251b52, 329a16, 380a39, 380a52, 381a8, etc.

#### **guiar.**

This is a normal transitive verb of motion, demonstrating the element of *goal* more clearly than *enbiar*. Only two instances of the verb with pure infinitive occur, however, and both come from the *Milagros*. No prepositional occurrences of *guiar* with infinitive are noted in these texts.

nos guie fer cosas por ond salvos seamos *Mil* 582  
 El que guió a Judas fazer el mal mercado *Mil* 871

#### **mouer.**

The regular construction of *mouer* is with *a*. Its use is as transitive, intransitive and reflexive with that preposition. In the following instance, the first *a* is evidently the personal accusative sign, but may have influenced the omission of *a* just before the infinitive.

mouio a este Yuçaf Abentexefin passar a España *Cron* 557a23

(c) *Reflexive Verbs*

Reflexive verbs of motion as a class, when taking the infinitive to indicate the *goal* or the *purpose* of an action, usually take the prepositional constructions rather than the pure infinitive. The connection of finite verb and infinitive is not felt to be as close as with *yr, venir*, etc. *Purpose*, rather than *goal*, is the predominating function of the infinitive. In the citations below, all from poetical works, the preposition may have been voluntarily omitted for metrical reasons, the pure infinitive and that with *a* being sufficiently equivalent with such verbs.

**adelantarse.**

adelantauase Simacus el colpe rresçebir *Alex* 1998

**levantarse.**

Infinitive constructions with *a, de, por* and *pora* are also found.

Levantose est monge rezar la matinada,

Tanner a los matines, despertar la mesnada,

Enderazar las lampadas, allumnar la posada *Mil* 288

**trabaiarse.**

More frequent infinitive constructions with *de, por* and *en* are noted with *trabaiarse*.

rogar te quiero . . . que tu non te trauages tanto me perseguir  
*SDom* 696

**vezarse.**

The constructions with *de* and *a* are also found. Absorption of *a* may have been operative in this instance:

se veza aprender *Aliz* 2243

## THE INDEPENDENT PURE INFINITIVE

22. Meyer-Lübke<sup>1</sup> gives three classes of propositions in which the infinitive is the only verb present; interrogative, exclamatory, and imperative propositions. The reason for the lack of a finite form of the verb is that the person speaking is thinking in very general terms, and not of one individual as

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, § 528.

such; hence he employs the general form of preposition, as in *Pourquoi pleurer? Why weep?* Such sentences usually have the value of negative propositions, *Pourquoi pleurer?* meaning that there is no cause for weeping.

Diez<sup>1</sup> states that the independent infinitive can be used in lively discourse, to give rapid orders, summon help, etc. Thus the speaker gets to the goal of his thought more quickly than if the personal form were used. Meyer-Lübke mentions the same classes of independent infinitive propositions as Diez.

The historical infinitive of Latin is said by Diez to have no application in the Romance languages. Only French knows an analogous construction, where the rapid beginning of an action is expressed by *de* with the infinitive. Diez considered that these were not cases of ellipsis, but resulted from the natural tendency to substitute the prepositional for the pure infinitive. This point of view is interesting because Luker<sup>2</sup> in his Columbia University dissertation on the historical infinitive in French, has brought a considerable body of evidence together to prove just the contrary, viz. that ellipsis is the process involved in the French construction, and that the frequency of use of *penser de* in the required senses justified the omission of *penser*.

Our texts offer so few examples of the independent infinitive in any of the categories mentioned by Diez and Meyer-Lübke that they may be considered as highly sporadic. *Mil* 889 offers a case closely resembling the historical infinitive:

Fueron luego venidos grant turma de peones,  
Entraron en la iglesia, trovaron los ladrones,  
Manetraronlos luego commo vinien fellones,  
Darles grandes feridas con muy grandes bastones

Menéndez Pidal's remark for the *Cid* might be extended to include our other texts as well: *Se rechaza del Cantar el uso del infinitivo con valor de imperativo.*<sup>3</sup> In *Aliz* 2435 (Morel-

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, p. 203, § 4. See also Hanssen, *Gram.*, p. 255.

<sup>2</sup> Luker: *The Use of the Infinitive instead of a Finite Verb in French.*

<sup>3</sup> *Cid* I, § 157.



Fatio) appears, however, the infinitive *guardarte*, rendered by Janer in *Alex* 2293 as the imperative form *guardate*:

Quieres toller del mundo vna grant claredat,  
quieres tornar a Gresçia a grant tenebredat,  
traydor, por que amas tan fiera maluestat?  
guardarte que non fagas con Belsus hermandat!

The infinitive in exclamations is illustrated by *Sac* 75:

Torno a sus discipulos que sedien en ardura,  
Confortolos e dixoles ¡ Dormir, auet folgura !

and in *Duelo* 178–190, occurs the unique refrain *eya velar*! with both exclamatory and imperative force:

- Cantica.* Eya velar, eya velar, eya velar.  
178. Velat aliamas de los iudios, eya velar:  
Que non vos furten el Fijo de Dios, eya velar.  
179. Ca furtarvoslo querran, eya velar:  
Andres e Peidro et Iohan, eya velar.  
180. Non sabedes tanto descanto, eya velar:  
Que salgades de so el canto, eya velar.  
181. Todos son ladronçiellos, eya velar:  
Que assechan por los pestiellos, eya velar.  
182. Vuestra lengua tan palabrera, eya velar:  
A vos dado mala carrera, eya velar, *etc., etc.*

#### THE PURE INFINITIVE DEPENDENT ON RELATIVE PARTICLES, ETC.

##### THE INFINITIVE DEPENDING ON THE RELATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS

23. Meyer-Lübke<sup>1</sup> in discussing the infinitive with the relative and interrogative pronouns states that all the Romance languages have equivalents of *non habeo quod* with infinitive. French is said to add *de* after mistaking *que* for the conjunction, e.g. *si n'i ot que de l'avalier*. But the construction is much more common in the West. Meyer-Lübke cites examples having the infinitive dependent on *por do*, *como* and *donde*, as well

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, § 676.

as *que*. In explaining the phenomenon of the infinitive with the relative, he takes the Italian *Non ho que mangiare*, which he considers as a fusion of *Non ho que mangi* and *Non ho a mangiare*. Stress of emotion is blamed for the loss of grammatical correctness.

Menéndez Pidal<sup>1</sup> remarks on this subject: "*Además del verbo, también rige infinitivo sin preposición el relativo, ó la partícula interrogativa. El infinitivo se halla en vez del subjuntivo, no sólo tras 'que' . . . sino tras 'quien'.*"

Diez adds that the infinitive in these phrases is "*complexif*," i.e. it is construed immediately with the relative or interrogative particle, but can refer to a direct object preceding, as in *buscáis mentiras que decir, teneis dineros que gastar*, etc. Diez finds the only difference between *non so que fare* and *non so fare questa cosa* to be the order of words. According to him, the infinitive depends on the finite verb, and the relative or interrogative comes to separate the two. There is no ellipsis of a verb in a finite mode, on which the infinitive could depend. Diez finds the construction of early Vulgar Latin origin, giving various examples such as *non habent quid respondere*, etc.

The popularity of the infinitive so employed became strong in the West, as remarked by Meyer-Lübke. This is especially true of Old Spanish where the variety of its uses is quite striking. Otto, for the Portuguese of Camões, does not discuss in detail the cases he notes, but cites about twenty illustrations of the principle, practically all of them being with *que*. The other relatives and interrogatives were evidently either lacking or extremely rare. Old Spanish offers a much richer field, with greater latitude in the choice of the determining particles, and with fewer restrictions in the circumstances of their use.

#### (a) *Que with Various Verbs*

Several verbs are found with the relative and interrogative particle *que* taking the infinitive form, chief of which verbs is *auer*. Though current in most of the texts of this period,

<sup>1</sup> *Cid* I, § 160, [5. See also Hanssen, *Gram.*, p. 254.

*auer que* occurs less often in the *Cid* than *saber que* with infinitive. Sometimes there is the double object construction, as noted by Diez: *Tant avien que veer en esta pestilencia*, SMill 210, but this is by no means as common as that without the second object. The element of *necessity* gradually comes to be noticed in the locutions *auer que* and *tener que*, when the origin of the constructions has been forgotten (see *auer*, *auer a* and *auer de* with infinitive object, expressing *necessity*, etc.)

**auer** (see *auer*, *Cid* II).

por en avemos qué fablar *Cid* 344

abrien que veer *Cid* 3100

Por ond de la su Madre oviessen que fablar *Mil* 441

Avia que vistir, avia que calzar,

Avia pora mi, avia pora dar *Mil* 760

... que aian que planner *Duelo* 96

heuos yo que gradir mucho *Aliz* 191

mucho ay que far *Aliz* 517

avremos y que fer *Aliz* 597

non auie que fer de tal algomeria *Aliz* 801

los vnos e los otros auien pro que veyer *Aliz* 1102

de la mi couardia avien que rretrayer *Aliz* 1302

avran . . . de nos que fablar *Aliz* 1323

aurie en otra guisa tres dias bien que far *Aliz* 1414

ouieron todos en lo al que veyer *Aliz* 1559

non ayas que temer *Aliz* 2082

avrie pro que veyer *Aliz* 2211

sienpre ha que plorar *Aliz* 2239

auie el rrey mucho mas que fablar *Aliz* 2273

non han que veyer *Aliz* 2374

avremos que dezir *Aliz* 2412

avrel que gradeçir *Aliz* 2503

auemos vna estonda asaz que deportar *Aliz* 2512

**fallar.**

fallauan que comer *Cron* 134a38

... porque ... fallasse ell algo que leuar del *Cron* 137a47

**saber.**

Diez remarks the prevalence of *saber* with the interrogative pronoun and infinitive. Meyer-Lübke makes special mention

of the negative of *saber*, where the emotion of the speaker is made to account for the use of the general form of the verb instead of the specific and finite form: thus in English *I don't know what to do!* instead of *I do not know what I should do*. Examples of the positive *saber que* with infinitive are extremely rare. The use of the ethical dative *se* is noted frequently. The infinitive in all cases is found to be *far*, *fer*, or *fazer*, thus paralleling the English expression cited above.

Non sabia con grant ira que fer el diablado *Mil* 361

non se sabien que fer *Mil* 396

non sopo al que fer *SDom* 331

Non sopo con la cueyta Menalao que fer *Aliz* 472

non sabe qué se far *Cid* 370

miedo an en Valençia que no saben qué se far *Cid* 1155

non sabent ques far *Cid* 1174

sabed qué fer dellos, Campeador *Cid* 2124.

sabredes qué fer oy *Cid* 3150

nin sabien que se fer *Aliz* 2043

nin se sabian ya que fazer *Cron* 746a30

non sabemos al que fazer *Cron* 390b21

non sabien que se fazer ant el *Cron* 375b44

non sabien que se fazer *Cron* 415a20

non sabie que se fazer *Cron* 559a38

non sabie que se fazer *Cron* 566a26

#### **ser.**

esto es sobre todo a los dioses que gradir *Aliz* 926

#### **tener.**

The lack of necessity in *tener que* is to be remarked in these examples:

aun por que quisiessse non ternia que dar *SDom* 176

Aun asaz tenia cosas que vos deçir *SOria* 175

El non tenie que darlis *SMill* 239

non lis tenie que dar *SMill* 254

sy toujesse que dar *SDom* 363

#### **ver.**

todos ueyen en el que alabar et que cobdiçiar de bien pora si  
*Cron* 692b15

(b) *Prepositions with que and the Infinitive*

In contrast with the Portuguese of Camões, and probably surpassing the other Romance languages in freedom of employment, Old Spanish offers quite a number of prepositions used with *que* and infinitive. There is a sufficient group of examples to indicate that the construction was a well recognized one, including the six prepositions *a*, *con*, *de*, *en*, *por* and *sobre*. The preposition is evidently determined by the infinitive following, as in *sobre que contender*, *en que trauar*, *a que se tornar*, etc. *Por que* is noted most frequently, and because of this fact comes later to be felt as a unit.

## a.

non auian a que se tornar *Cron* 571a50

non sabie a que catar *Cron* 656b21

nin sabien a que tornar *Alex* 2043

## con.

el non tenie y estrumentos de fierro ni de al con que lo fazer  
*Cron* 64b24

Non ovo nul conseio con que se defender *Mil* 146

non auiendo con quel tener *Cron* 517a33

## de.

no tenie de que quitarlo *Cron* 205b20

non auien dé que se crobir *Cron* 312b39

auien de que comprar que calçassen *Cron* 492a14

. . . dond ouiesse de que se calçar los que la egleſia ſiruiessen  
*Cron* 492a17

non auien de que conprarlo *Cron* 588a17

## en.

The three examples of *en que* with infinitive show *trauar* as determining the preposition. They are found in the *Crónica* only.

por que non le ayan los omnes en quel trauar *Cron* 419a39

deuedes . . . catar que non fagades cosa que uos ayan los omnes  
en que trauar *Cron* 421b28

non fallan los omnes buenos que en las sus barraganias fallen  
en que trauar *Cron* 511b17

por.

vos he porque reptar *Duelo* 128  
 no auien por que matarse ni por que lazarar *Cron* 9b47  
 no auien por que labrar *Cron* 13a7  
 no as por que me querer mál *Cron* 43a28  
 . . . que non aya ninguno porque me escarnir *Soria* 185  
 non auemos nos por que matarle *Cron* 164a36  
 et que dalli adelante non ouiesse por que se leuantar contienda  
 entrellos *Cron* 367b39  
 rey, non as por que tener ninguno destes *Cron* 411b24  
 nin ouo mester de fazer batallas, nin por que husar de fecho  
 de armas *Cron* 425a31

sobre.

*Contender* causes the use of *sobre* with *que* in these two instances:

Quiero my firmamiento ante todos poner  
 que despues non ayades sobre que contender *Alix* 2598  
 . . . por que non ouiesse sobre que contender *Cron* 367b30

#### OTHER RELATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE PARTICLES THAN *QUE*

24. The high favor in which infinitive constructions were held in Old Spanish is evidenced by their frequency of use with relatives and interrogatives other than *que*. The most striking fact in this connection is the variety of prepositional modification noted: *a don*, *por do*, *por o*, *con qui*, *a quien* and *con quien*, all with the infinitive.

#### *com(m)o*, *cuemo*.

There is a *causal* force in *como* with the infinitive in *Cron* 70b27: *entendieron que aquella batalla cibdadana era, e mas que cibdadana como seer ellos todos parientes unos con otros*. Otherwise, *como* is used with infinitive as the second member of the comparative construction *tanto . . . como* (positive degree). The comparative degree, *mas . . . que*, likewise takes the infinitive: *querien mas moryr que beujr aontados*, *Alix* 1405.

The use of *tanto . . . como* (Eng. *tantamount to*) in definitions is illustrated in the last two citations below.

Qual bien seria tan grande commo la cara suya veer,  
 Commo nasce el fijo del padre entender,  
 O commo salle el Spiritu de entre ambos saber,  
 O commo son un Dios todos tres connosçer *Loor* 189  
 . . . tan buena cosa cuemo seer desuergonçado *Cron* 117a16  
 restolarla es tanto como « conbralla a seruicio de Dios » *Cron*  
 734a20  
 es *imperare* en el nuestro language tanto cuemo mandar sobre  
 otros et sennorear *Cron* 90b12

**do, don.**

non sauemos do yr *SDom* 362  
 non sopo do tornar *SDom* 649  
 Mezquino peccador non veo do ribar *Mil* 752  
 non sabien do tornar *Aliz* 1311  
 non avre do yr *Aliz* 1672  
 non lo han do auer *Aliz* 2361  
 non auies do entrar *Aliz* 2413  
 non se auiendo do acoger *Cron* 464b32

**a don.**

non semejauan en los coraçones a don baler *Aliz* 246

**por do.**

por que non ouiessem . . . por do passar *Cron* 573b43

**o, on.**

ni fallauan o complir la sanna *Cron* 75b5  
 non sabie on tornar *Aliz* 1568

**por o.**

. . . por que ouiessem por o passar *Cron* 71b16  
 . . . por que no ouiessem por o salir al rio *Cron* 74b46  
 non auian por o salir, nin por o entrar *Cron* 765b18  
 non auiendo carrera por o passar a el *Cron* 674b19  
 non auiendo por o lidiar nin por o fuyr *Cron* 256a18

**qui.**

non ha qui tomallos *Cid* 1778

**con qui.**

no aurién con qui guerrear *Cron* 50a48

**quien.**

buscava dia malo, sy gelo ouies quien dar *Aliz* 518  
 non y auia quien gelo rrencurar *Aliz* 1725  
 non auiendo quien ge lo amparar *Cron* 418a22  
 no auie quien uedalles la passada *Cron* 209a32

**a quien.**

non sabemos a quien dezir nuestra cueyta *Cron* 411b45  
 non fallo alli a quien uender su quinto *Cron* 525b14

**con quien.**

non auien con quien se parar *Cron* 365a35

### RELATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE ADJECTIVES WITH SUBSTANTIVE AND INFINITIVE

25. Neither Otto nor Dittes gives any instances of this construction for the Portuguese of Camões and for Old Provençal. At least two cases are at hand from the *Crónica*:

non sabien todos que onrra le dar por ello *Cron* 325b8  
 non sabien a qual parte yr buscarlas *Cron* 610a29

### THE COMPARATIVE QUE WITH INFINITIVE

26. A notable resemblance is remarked between the infinitive with the comparative *que* and that with the relative and interrogative pronouns. In both cases the speaker chooses the most direct means of expressing his thought, instead of using the more precise finite form of the verb. Of course, if the verb after the comparative *que* has a different subject from that of the first clause, there is hardly any choice for the speaker, i.e. the finite verb is regularly used: *Mas quiero io sennera seer embergonzada Que tanta buena duenna sea desamparada*, Mil 566.<sup>1</sup> Confusion of two thoughts is readily seen in the frequent use of the intrusive *non* (French *ne*) after the comparative *que*: *mas querien morir ya que non ueuir en aquel*

<sup>1</sup> Quoted by Meyer-Lübke, *Gram.* III, § 610, to illustrate fusion of *que* meaning *that* with *que* meaning *than*.



*crebanto*, Cron 464b12. In our examples, this intrusive *non* occurs slightly more often than the more logical positive, especially in the prose *Crónica*. *Querer* is by far the most frequent verb of the first clause, *valer* being the only other one appearing at all currently. As variants for *mas*, the regular first member of the comparative group, are noted *ante* and *antes* as well as the comparatives *mayor* and *meior*: *quisieron ante seer quemados que morir a manos de los romanos*, Cron 50a16, and *meior me sera esso que beuir en peccado*, SDom 52. In *Alex* 2362, *a* appears unexpectedly with the infinitive: *mas les valdrie que fuesen por naçer . . . que tal vida a veyer*. *En* is used in both members in *Alex* 1251: *mejor abinie en armas menear que en dezir rrasones nin en consello dar*.

(a) *querer*.

*mas querie furtar Que ir a la elesia nin a puentes alzar*

*Mil* 142

*Querie de meior grado vevir con las serpientes . . .*

*Que derredor las cuevas veer tan grandes ientes* *SMil* 45

*querrien morir lidiando mas que seyer rrendidos* *Aliz* 1082

*querrien mas fincar que escapar a uida* *Aliz* 1384

*querrie mas seyer muerto o estar por naçer*

*que tantas e tan grandes ocasiones veyer* *Aliz* 1396

*querien mas moryr que beuir aontados* *Aliz* 1405

*querrie seyer mas muerto que seyer con los biuos* *Aliz* 1420

*. . . mas querie el alma ally dexar*

*que con manos bueytas a su señor tornar* *Aliz* 1555

*mas quiero esperarlos, en el canpo morir*

*que con tan fiera carga en esti siglo beuir* *Aliz* 1643

*querian de los griegos mas seyer conpañones*

*que seguir la conpañia de tales traydores* *Aliz* 1714

*Dixo Dario: "mas quiero morir o pasion prender*

*o del rrey Alixandre en su prision caher*

*que sola vna ora con vusco vida aver* *Aliz* 1721

*mas querie . . . peligrar o morir*

*que vn fallimento de su conpañero oyr* *Aliz* 1977

*. . . mas querie el morir que vn pesar de Simacus veyer nin*

*oyr* *Aliz* 1998

*mas quisieron morir que seyer desleales* *Aliz* 2061

querien seyer muertos mas que seyer nascidos *Alix* 2364

Mas lo querrien tener que grant aver ganar *Mil* 379

Querria seer muerta mas que soffrir tal vida *Duelo* 17

Querrie seer muerta mas que viva seer *Duelo* 45

Querria en la tiesta levar grandes mazadas

Mas que soffrir las cuitas *Duelo* 55

Mas vos quiero la cosa plana-miente contar,

Que prender grant trabaio e el corso damnar *SMil* 475

Also: *Alix* 1674, 1296.

With intrusive *non*:

mas quisieron moryr que non seyer rrebtados *Alix* 1066

querrie mas seyer muerto que non seyer rrancado *Alix* 1390

mas querien morir que non entrar en seruidumbre de françeses

*Cron* 353b12

antes me quiero yr con mios fijos a tierra de moros, que non ser

uençudo en campo et fincar por aleuoso *Cron* 516a36

**valer** (u-).

Mucho mas nos valdria todos muertos seer

Que de refeçes omnes tal escarnio prender *Duelo* 170

Mas val con sendos oios salvar vuestros peccados,

Que con los dos veervos en infierno damnados *SMil* 276

Mas valdrie seer muertos que dar tal furçion *SMil* 397

With intrusive *non*:

mas valdrie la cosa que fues por enpeçar,

que non por nuestra onta en cabo la lexar *Alix* 714

mas ualdrie auenturarse e lidiar con el, que no pechar est auer

*Cron* 25b45

mas ualie salir matarse con ellos que no soffrir los fasta que

ellos entrassen por fuerça *Cron* 47a42

mas uale ser muerto o preso que non fazer mal fecho *Cron*

419b36

mas ualie pechar et dar de lo que ouiesse et saluar lo al, que

non perder los cuerpos *Cron* 495b42

(b) *Other Verbs in First Clause*

These include such verbs and locutions as *amar*, *plazer*, *preçiar*, *cobdiçar*, *tener por meior*, *es meior*, *es mayor seso* and the like:

mas plazio a los griegos que ganar toda Francia *Aliz* 608  
 meior te es a ti los dineros tomar  
 que de gentes catiuas enbargado estar *Aliz* 1244  
 Mas preçiaba dineros que iustiçia tener *Mil* 239  
 Preçiarlo edes mas que mediano comer *Mil* 625  
 mas aman fer thesoros que vedar estultiçia *Aliz* 1800

With intrusive *non*:

plogol mas con aquel logar que no con ell otro, queriendo ante  
 que los daquela uilla ouiessem menos dabondo, e fuessen en  
 sennorio dessi mismos, que non seer much abundados en  
 poder dotri *Cron* 36a31  
 era meior de salir e matar se con ellos que no morir alli de sed  
*Cron* 75a20  
 touo que era meior pedirles poco, e yr todouia creciendo que non  
 pedilles mucho, e auer depues a menguar *Cron* 35a27  
 touo por meior de morir que non fazer ninguna destas cosas  
*Cron* 38a13  
 mayor seso es et mayor pro en las cosas dubdosas esperar  
 tiempo pora quando omne pueda fazer su fecho a meioria  
 de si, que non apressurarse con atreuencia loca et cometer el  
 fecho a su danno *Cron* 687a43  
 meior era prouar en la batalla la uoluntad del çielo et el periglo  
 que non uer tantos males de su tierra et tantos crebantos  
 de sus sennorios *Cron* 687b12  
 meior serie que non yazer encerrados *Cron* 417a38

The first member of the comparison is represented by *si*:

Dixol Munno a Oria: ¿cobdiçias allá ir?  
 Dixol a Munno Oria: yo si, mas que vivir *SOria* 158

## PART II

### THE PREPOSITIONAL INFINITIVE

#### THE INFINITIVE WITH DE

27. Diez states that Latin offers no examples of the use of prepositions with the infinitive,<sup>1</sup> and that when so found in Romance the combination takes the place of the Latin gerund or gerundive. He finds in the scribes' Latin of the late Vulgar Latin period various interesting cases of the infinitive with preposition, of which the following are representative: *ad scribere tolli*, *cepit ad vendere*, *ad habitare aut laborare*, etc. These show an increasing usefulness of the infinitive, and forecast the conditions later prevailing in the Romance languages. As soon as the infinitive was considered capable of use with a preposition, its field could be extended almost indefinitely, restricted only by the limitations of the prepositions themselves. Diez further remarks that the preposition *de* had its meaning more weakened than any other preposition.<sup>2</sup> It was only a natural development when the infinitive took the place of a noun in normal noun locutions with *de*, as when, instead of saying *vengo de Madrid* they said *vengo de ver Madrid*. These instances are numerous, but undoubtedly the *de*-type most influential on the later growth of infinitive usefulness was the *de* in the sense of *concerning*, *about*, *in the matter of*, *relative to*, called by Meyer-Lübke the *relative de*.<sup>3</sup> This is the particular sense of *de* that shows itself weakened to such a point that it is sometimes almost impossible to see even a vestige of its original meaning left. But in most doubtful instances the rendition of *de* by one of the above approximate equivalents will not be

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, p. 201.     See also Hanssen, *Gram.*, pp. 254, 299-303 (*de*).

<sup>2</sup> *Gram.* III, p. 234.     <sup>3</sup> *Gram.* III, § 340.

conspicuously out of place, e.g. in such expressions as *me duele de, me cale de, fermoso de, dulce de, enpeçar de, pensar de*, etc. All uses taken together, the *de*-infinitive gained gradually in popular favor until it surpassed both the pure and the *a*-infinitives. Thus our texts yield about twenty verbs with *de*-infinitive subject, and forty with *de*-infinitive object, as well as adjective and noun constructions not found with the pure infinitive. It is especially significant that the *de*-infinitive could hold its own in the field of infinitive subjects and objects, since here were territories that would normally stand firm for the pure infinitive. It seems so much more natural to get to the objective of the action of the finite verb without introducing a comparatively foreign prepositional sense (*comienço dormir, meresco seer enperador, temia perder el reyno*). But the relative *de* was so fitting with many verbs (*pensar de, acordarse de, apresurarse de*, etc.), and *de* could so readily indicate the origin or the object with other verbs (considered by Meyer-Lübke the starting-point of the spread of *de*-objects, according to *Gram. III*, § 386) as with *començar, çesar* and the like — while the various senses of *de* were so delicately shaded one into another — that *de* came to be more and more pervasive in infinitive constructions where its use was far from traditional. Its sense was of course weakening all this time, since it could not be employed with such varied verbs if its force remained at all constant (e.g. *aborrecien de oyr falar* . . . Cron 135b36; *aprende de dar tu cuerpo a los omnes*, Cron 113a24; *assacaron de fazer un beuer*, Cron 30a45; *buscaron de echarlo*, Duelo 70, etc.). It came, then, to be more or less a handle of the infinitive that could be utilized with most verbs taking an infinitive object. There were some that remained true to the pure infinitive, such as the modal auxiliaries and the members of the *fazer* group, because here the action of the infinitive was quite immediate to the action of the conjugated verb, but most of the other verbs taking the pure infinitive object felt the encroachment of the *de*-infinitive. The special group of *de*-infinitive objects with verb phrases of the type *tener en*

*coraçon, auer en uso, escoger por meior*, etc. are of interest, as they form a considerable body of useful expressions in which the *de*-infinitive has largely departed from its traditional *relative* sense, and successfully invaded a pure infinitive field. It is significant that these expressions are noted only in the *Crónica*, i.e. that in the period between the *Cid* and the *Crónica* the use of the *de*-infinitive had rapidly increased. In this group, the action of the infinitive was not felt as immediate to that of the main verb, and the infinitive needed the slightly introductory force of the *de* (*no tenie en coraçon de numqua tornar*, Cron 39b36; *ouieron et tomaron los cristianos en uso de dezir* . . . Cron 361a3).

Other functions of the *de*-infinitive are found coming from traditional senses of the preposition. Thus the *de*-infinitive may indicate *direction from* (*venir de, tornarse de, despertar de, leuantarse de*, etc.), the *cause* of an action (*alabarse de, enoiarse de, castigarse de*, etc.), and the *means* or *manner* of an action (*adobar de, gozarse de*, etc.) Its use with adjectives and nouns, though not traditional, becomes one of its important functions (*graue de uencer*, Cron 161b21; *fermosa de catar*, Cron 146b38; *tiempo de casar*, Cron 22a34; *seso de fablar*, Mil 691, etc.). All these constructions will be considered later.

#### THE *DE*-INFINITIVE AS SUBJECT WITH *SER* AND AN ADJECTIVE OR ADVERB

28. It is an interesting fact that Otto<sup>1</sup> finds no cases of the *de*-infinitive acting as the subject of a verb in Camões. This would indicate that the field of the *de*-infinitive had not been extended so far in Portuguese as in Spanish, though the discrepancy in period and school prevents accurate comparison. In Old Spanish this construction is indeed quite common, though only one case occurs in the *Cid* (*cómo vos plaz de far*, Cid 670). The *Crónica* is particularly prolific in examples of the *de*-infinitive as subject.

<sup>1</sup> *Port. Inf.*, § 23.

Under the immediate class with *ser* and an adjective or adverb, the following examples may be cited:

Luengo serie de todo quanto que vio contar *Aliz* 2471  
 malo es de guardar *SDom* 51  
 De dar las tres meaias non li será pesado *SMill* 2  
 A tal sennor es bueno de servir e rogar *SMill* 445  
 serie meior de llegar mayor poder *Cron* 71b32  
 era meior de salir et matar se con ellos que no morir de sed  
*Cron* 75a21  
 a aquellos bien les estaua de no yr en huestas *Cron* 77a52  
 non era derecho de tornar *Cron* 180b46  
 non serie derecho de ge lo tener por fuerça *Cron* 419a7  
 mas guisado era de yr ell *Cron* 437a7  
 era bien de oyr lo que su hermano lo enuiaua dezir *Cron* 507a24  
 guisado es de fincar uos assy *Cron* 609a30  
 era meior de yr su carrera *Cron* 695b29  
 meior era de lo acabar *Cron* 747b7  
 serie guisado de yr alla algunos *Cron* 751a32

#### THE DE-INFINITIVE AS SUBJECT WITH SER AND SUBSTANTIVE

29. The subgrouping of instances of the *de*-infinitive as subject into those used with *ser* and an adjective or adverb, and those with *ser* and a substantive, is for convenience of comparison with Otto's work for the Portuguese rather than for any value that such grammatical subtleties may be fancied to have. The difference is negligible between *guisado es de fincar*, *Cron* 609a30, and *sera guisada cosa de no caer*, *Cron* 74a18, as far as concerns the function of the infinitive. The *Crónica* again yields a great majority of cases of *de*-infinitive as subject.

Asaz es fiera pena . . . de nunca veyer omne la cara de nuestro  
 Señor *Aliz* 2399  
 De fablarvos en ellas serie grant prolixidat,  
 De tornar en el bispo es nuestra voluntat *SMill* 72  
 Vistió el omne bueno los pannos del altar,  
 Con los quales es ley de la missa cantar *SMill* 179

- era seso de guardar su onra *Cron* 30a7  
 es graue cosa de se mudar lo que uiene por natura *Cron* 124b14  
 es cosa much usada . . . de maldezir los maestros *Cron*  
 143a50  
 ¿ que prouecho nos es de auer uencido los barbaros? *Cron*  
 184a33  
 es culpa de la negar a los que lo piden *Cron* 186a6  
 nin les serie loor nin prez . . . de tornar a sus casas *Cron* 285b38  
 mayor prez nos sera de mouer hueste et tomar armas *Cron*  
 286a16  
 Graue cosa fue all arçobispo de uenir *Cron* 291a19  
 Costumbre era . . . de criar se los donzelles et las donzellas fijos  
 de los altos omnes *Cron* 307b30  
 fue su conseio . . . de dexarse de todas las cosas *Cron* 586b18  
 muy noble cosa era de veerle sus fijas *Cron* 639b8  
 commo es costumbre de fazer *Cron* 641a14  
 es rrazon . . . de gelo razonar omne *Cron* 728a50  
 Manera es de los estoriadores . . . de emendar sienpre en las  
 razones pasadas *Cron* 737a15  
 non serie mas su pro de alli estar *Cron* 739a21  
 non era marauilla de auer ende grant pesar *Cron* 748a33  
 non era mesura de partir *Cron* 751a29  
 grant cosa serie de lo poder acabar *Cron* 766b24

#### THE DE-INFINITIVE AS SUBJECT WITH THE IMPERSONAL VERBS

30. The *de*-infinitive as subject is considerably more frequent than the pure infinitive with the impersonal verbs (cf. § 12 above). Among the verbs taking both the pure and the *de*-infinitive as subject are noted *abondar*, *caer*, *conuenir*, *per-tenesçer*, *plazer* and *semeiar*. Impersonal constructions of the type *es forzoso*, *es posible*, are treated in § 28 under *ser* and an adjective or adverb. These expressions are comparatively rare, with the exception of *es bueno*, *es bien*, *es mejor*, *es malo*, and *es guisado*. Although the *Crónica* furnishes most of the available instances of the *de*-infinitive with impersonal verbs, the other texts employ this construction from time to time.



**abondar.**

This verb appears with pure infinitive also.

¿e como non abunda all emperador de dar sus quitaciones a los caualleros cristianos? *Cron* 274b43

**acaesçer.**

acaesçiol de posar en las casas dell obispo *Cron* 712b2

**auer pro.**

non uos a pro lidar mas por el *Cron* 289a38

**caer.**

The pure infinitive also occurs with *caer*.

cayo por suert a la reyna Lampeto de fincar en la tierra et mantener el regno et deffender le *Cron* 219a46

non me cae a mi de uos conseiar *Cron* 732b44

nos cae aqui agora en razon . . . de contar aqui como fue aquella contienda *Cron* 673b22

**conuenir.**

The pure and *a*-infinitives are also found with *conuenir*. *De* is noted only in the *Crónica*.

conuiene de guardarnos *Cron* 286b40

les conuinie de yr se *Cron* 318b17

conuiene aqui de fablar en el linage de los reyes *Cron* 467b32

conuiene de casarla *Cron* 644b18

conuerna a uos de dezir . . . alguna cosa *Cron* 189b12

Also: *Cron* 698b24, 748b16, 768b13.

**cumplir.**

fallaron por su acuerdo que les cumple de auer entre si algunos omnes buenos por mayores *Cron* 85a49

nol cumple de usar destas artes *Cron* 122a51

poco uos cumple a uos de saber de mi fidalguia nada *Cron* 427b47

**entrar (en voluntad).**

One case occurs in *Alix* 1147:

entrol en voluntad de yr en rromeria

**guisarse.**

non se les guisaua dauar la batalla *Cron* 75b14

si se le guisasse de fazer le cuemo fiziera a Ponpeyo *Cron* 83a25

**paresçer.**

paresçie mal de leuar moros *Cron* 525b48

paresçie grieue de guerrear Calatraua a aquellos que la uinien  
combater *Cron* 695b2

**pertenesçer.**

The pure infinitive subject is likewise used with *pertenesçer*.

a quien pertenesçe de guardar el regno *Cron* 723a18

**pesar.**

como quier quel pesaua de yr ell con tales nuevas *Cron* 498b25

**plazer.**

The pure infinitive is also found as subject with *plazer*.

dezidme, cavalleros, cómo vos plaze de far *Cid* 670

plezralis de oilla *Mil* 215

plazria asus parientes de ueerla transida *SDom* 680

les plazia de conplir quanto les auie dicho *Cron* 590b23

**semeiar.**

The pure infinitive is also found as subject with *semejar*. In such a case as *Cron* 45a52 it is clear that the *de*-infinitive is acting as the predicate rather than as the subject of *semeiaua*: *e por end les semeiaua de seer destroyda una uez, e que sacassen de sos coraçones la manziella de Carthago pora siempre*. The similarity in sense between this *de*-infinitive construction and that with *ser* is conspicuous: *Sennor, tu los connoçes quales son de sacar*, *Duelo* 102. The mutual dependence on *semeiaua* of the *de*-infinitive and the *que* clause with the subjunctive is also to be remarked.

Pero razon semeia, maguera que tardemos,

De contarvos los signos *SMil* 377

les semeiaua grieue cosa de seruir nin obedescer a otri *Cron*  
354a34

non me semeia guisado de uos yr conseiar *Cron* 497b40

**ser mester and menester.**

non me es mester de yr a los moros *Cron* 512a44

quando fuer mester de lo departir *Cron* 577a25

cosas que mester les fueren de comer et de beuer et de albergue  
*Cron* 686a27

menester les era de conseio tomar *Aliz* 1953

**tener pro.**

¿ que pro te tiene de te matar assi? *Cron* 442a40

**venir (u-).**

An interesting group of locutions having *de*-infinitive subject was based on *venir* as a common element. These locutions have notably diverse senses according to the noun used with *venir*. *Coraçon* is particularly frequent, as it is likewise in related object locutions with *tener* and *auer* (*ouo muy mas a coraçon de yr contra el*, *Cron* 132a24). Neither the pure infinitive nor any preposition other than *de* is noted with *venir* in this impersonal construction.

**venir a coraçon.**

Vinol a corazon do se sedie un dia

Al apostolo de Espanna de ir en romeria *Mil* 184

le ueno a coraçon de complirlo *Cron* 662a48

ueno a coraçon a un conde . . . de yr en romeria *Cron* 412a16

uenoles a coraçon a esos de Salamanca de mouer contienda  
contral rey *Cron* 673a24

**venir en coraçon.**

Vinoli adesora al rey en coraçon

de dar el monasterio al preçioso varon *SDom* 200

**venir a punto.**

sy les vino a punto de fablar en aquella misma razon *Cron*  
737a20

**venir a talent.**

uenol . . . a talent de fazer un ospital *Cron* 686a11

**venir en vision.**

En vision li ujno de fer vn ministerio *SDom* 267

**venir a voluntat.**

nin les vernie a uoluntat de lo comedir *Cron* 607b50

## THE DE-INFINITIVE AS PREDICATE NOUN

31. Only two instances are at hand of the *de*-infinitive as an ordinary predicate noun. In the second of these it will be seen that the *de* gives a certain introductory force needed by the unattached *fincar*:

el saber dell arte de geometria, que es de medir Cron 3b3  
 ca profession fazer el frayre, es renunçiar el mundo, esto es,  
 quel dexa pora siempre, et de fincar en la orden otrossi por  
 siempre Cron 692a3

Within the territory of the predicate infinitive is found, however, the important *de*-infinitive locution with *ser*. Menéndez Pidal<sup>1</sup> finds *ser* with *de*-infinitive only once in the *Cid*, though it is current elsewhere (*esto sea de vagar*, *Cid* 380). He also calls attention to the fact that *ser de* is the passive, in actual use, of *auer de*. Otto takes little note of the Portuguese<sup>2</sup> *ser de*, merely pointing out that it corresponds to the Latin *ad*-gerund (*ad credendum*) or the genitive of the gerundive. He expresses surprise, however, that *a* with the infinitive does not occur here instead of *de*. In Old Spanish both prepositions are common, though *de* is slightly the favorite. This is quite the contrary of the situation found in *auer a* and *de* with the infinitive, as here the *a* construction is many times more frequent.

non serien de contar Sac 68  
 es de acometer Sac 107  
 esto es de creer Sac 118  
 non es de olvidar nin es de encobrir Sac 145  
 essi es de temer SDom 153  
 mas era lo del Rey mas de maraujllar SDom 507  
 cosa aun es de deçir Loor 74  
 es de conplir Alix 658  
 non son de dexar Alix 1482  
 lo que es de venir Alix 1641  
 eran de poblar Cron 10a30

<sup>1</sup> *Cid* I, § 161, [2.

<sup>2</sup> *Port. Inf.*, § 23.

es todo de sufrir *SOria* 175

Non era pora nos de seer espendido *Duelo* 120

son de servir e onrrar *SMill* 448

non era cosa de encobrir *Mil* 511

Esta razon, sennora, tuia es de veer *Mil* 786

Other examples of the *de*-infinitive with *ser* will be found in: *Sac* 163; *Loor* 119; *Sig* 10, 69; *Mil* 141, 488, 601, 703, 867; *SDom* 153, 177, 570; *SMill* 109, 150, 487; *Alix* 1457, 1732, 2094, 2098, 2467, 2624, etc.

#### THE *DE*-INFINITIVE OBJECT AND THE RELATIVE *DE*

32. Meyer-Lübke<sup>1</sup> shows the union of the infinitive object with the conjugated verb by means of the preposition *de* to have been of Romance creation, yet to date back to that formative period, the processes of which to a large extent are still shrouded in conjecture. He considers the point of departure, from which the use of *de* spread to numerous verbs not normally taking it according to their sense, to have been with those verbs that could equally well take the *de* of *origin* or of *object*, such as *començar* and *çesar*. Another group assisting in the spread of *de* was that of verbs taking the indirect object of the person, and the *de*-infinitive object of the thing, such as *prometer*, *ordenar*, etc. It should be emphasized, however, that the most important cause of the rapid increase in the use of *de* was the fact that its sense permitted such weakening as to make it eventually serve more as a slightly significant introductory particle to the infinitive than as a real entity in the meaning of the sentence. And the sense of *de* that permitted such weakening was the *relative de* (i.e., *relative to, concerning, about, in the matter of*), that could be used so naturally with a large number of verbs (*pensar de, asmar de, auenturarse de, dubdar de*, etc.). Even with the verbs meaning *to begin* and *to cease*, this *relative de* was quite appropriate (*enpeçar de falar*, to begin *in the matter of* speaking). It was

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, § 386.

such a delicate prepositional sense that it crept inconspicuously into use with numerous verbs not readily attracting the *de* of *origin*, etc. Even with verbs normally taking the *de* of *cause* or *means* it is sometimes possible to consider the *relative de* as operative (*gozarse de*, to enjoy oneself *by means of*, *because of*, or *in the matter of* something). This shows the problem to be more subtle than profitable. The important fact is that this *de*-construction, by reason of its variously useful connotations, came to replace the pure infinitive to a very large extent, and even to encroach on the territory of the *a*-infinitive normally indicating *goal*. This was particularly true of the verb object class, where it was quite possible to view the relation of infinitive to verb in several manners, and where the prepositional construction was indeed a substitute for the object relation rather than that relation itself. Thus in the object group at least the following verbs are found with both *de* and *a*: *aprender*, *cobdiçar*, *començar*, *cometer*, *conpeçar*, *dexar*, *enpeçar*, *esforçar*(*se*), *mereçer*, *pensar* and *usar*. The *a* usually indicates the place or goal of the action, i.e. *place at which* or *to which* (*esforçarse a*, *començar a*, etc.), while the *de*, as explained above, is prevaillingly the *relative de*. Of these two prepositions *de* was used much more generally than *a* in the object group, but after this period, in which analogy operated most freely in causing various prepositions to be tried out with a given verb, the genius of the individual verb asserted itself in the fixing of its prepositional construction: *a* with *començar*, *en* with *pensar*, the pure infinitive with *mereçer*, *de* with *dexar* in the sense of *to cease*, etc. It should also be noted below that the *relative de*-infinitive is equally at home with transitive, intransitive and reflexive verbs, and that with the transitives and intransitives it sometimes causes an approach to the object relation (cf. *quedar*, *fallecer*, *membrarse*, etc.) The verbs cited below are, however, for the most part transitive.

For a discussion of infinitive locutions of the type *auer a coração de*, *auer en costumbre de*, *auer por costumbre de*, *auer en uso de*, *escoger por melhor de*, etc., see § 27 and § 33.

Meyer-Lübke cites an instance from *SMill* 105<sup>1</sup> in which

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, § 389.

he construes the *de*-infinitive as object of *querer*, thus showing the invasion of the territory of the pure infinitive object by the prepositional construction: *sennor, si tu quisiesse, yo mucho lo querria, de vevir solitario*. This instance is, however, only one of a number of such cases that are rather to be taken as the infinitive in apposition with a noun or pronoun (in this case *lo*), in which group it is by no means rare to find *de* introducing the infinitive. *Querer* does, however, take a real *de*-object in *Cron* 450b37: *quiso por su merced de mostrar esta grand coyta por quien era. aborrecer*.

*espantauanse todos et aborrecien de oyr falar de tan estranno comer Cron* 135b36

#### **acabar.**

The first citation below brings out more clearly than usual the *relative de* with infinitive.

*el templo fue acabado de fazer et consagrado Cron* 107a33  
*ca tantos acabo de uevir quando el fino Cron* 645b2  
*aquel anno acabo de cercar toda la uilla Cron* 171a41

#### **acordar(se).**

This verb, generally reflexive, is also noted with *a-*, *por-* and *en*-infinitives. The *Crónica*, the only text offering examples, has *de* most currently.

*acordaron los senadores . . . de poblar de cabo a Carthago Cron* 53a31  
*acordaron de dar algunos Cron* 87a42  
*acordaron de enuiarla pedir Cron* 469b31  
*acordaron de yrse meter en sus manos Cron* 368b45  
*auian acordado de lo fazer Cron* 729b43

Also: *Cron* 477a5, 549a17, 573a31, 729b32.

#### *Reflexive:*

*acordaron se de estar en su uilla Cron* 288b51  
*acordose de traer pleytesia con el rey Cron* 746a34  
*acordaronse todos los mas de yrse con la infante et non fincar en la villa Cron* 509b26

Also: *Cron* 754b39, 580a40.

**aprender.**

This verb was also used with the *a*-infinitive.

aprende de dar tu cuerpo a los omnes *Cron* 113a24

**apressurar.**

*Apressurarse* takes the *a*-infinitive as well.

apressuro por ende de sacarle de entre las maldades de este mundo *Cron* 667b36

**asmar.**

The pure infinitive is also noted with *asmar*, though the construction with *de* is the more frequent. Most of our texts yield examples, with the notable exception of the *Cid*.

Asmaron de levarla *SMill* 349

Asmaron de alzar se, meter toda mission *SMill* 397

Asmó de ir a elli *Mil* 636

asmo de ser clerigo, sauer bonas façañas *SDom* 34

asmo de fer se monge e fer obediencia *SDom* 81

asmo de apartarse en aquel logarejo *Alex* 923

auia asmado de lidiando morir *Alex* 1398

asmo de matar su fijo *Cron* 454a19

aiuen asmado de desonrrar sus mugeres *Cron* 608b42

asmo de las leuar de ally a otro lugar *Cron* 609b3

Also: *SMill* 12; *SDom* 263; *Alex* 721, 1873, 1925.

**assacar.**

sobreto assacaron de fazer un beuer de trigo cocho *Cron* 30a45

assacaron de fazer unos estrumentos de fierro *Cron* 695a33

**atreuerse.**

The pure, *a*- and *en*-infinitives are found with *atreuerse*.

no se atreuie de lidiar contra ellos *Cron* 239b51

atrouieron se de yr lidiar *Cron* 314b38

non se atreuiendo de atenderle alli *Cron* 357b14

nunca se atreuio de gelo dezir *Cron* 628b37



**auenturarse.**

Demando . . . si aurie y qui se quisesse auenturar por el de  
 passar nadando a la cibdat et recabar le esto *Cron* 59a8  
 se auenturarie de no poner y la ymagen *Cron* 117a42  
 quierome auenturar de yrlle uer et fazerle entender todo mi  
 coraçon *Cron* 413a22

**buscar.**

The construction with *pora*-infinitive also occurs.

Essos li buscaron de echarlo a mal *Duelo* 70

**çes(s)ar.**

The pure infinitive is likewise employed with *çes(s)ar*, though rarely. Verbs of this sense currently affect *de* (*acabar*, *dexar*, *fincar*, *finar*, *quedar*).

de plorar non çesaba *Duelo* 136  
 non çesen de verter *Duelo* 139  
 . . . fuego infernal, que de arder non çesa *Sac* 266  
 el non çessaua de al Criador serujr *SDom* 163  
 non çeses de prometer *Alex* 61

Also: *Duelo* 140; *Mil* 867.

**cobdiçiar.**

The pure infinitive is considerably more frequent than the *de*-construction with *cobdiçiar*. The infinitive is also noted with *a* and *por*.

cobdiciaua de seer el solo sennor de tod ell imperio *Cron* 81a5  
 En Espanna cobdiçio de luego empezar *Mil* 47

**començar.**

The pure and *a*-infinitives are also found with *començar*. For a discussion of *començar* with pure infinitive and the possibility of absorption of the preposition *a* in certain cases, see § 17. This verb, like *enpeçar*, is conspicuously lacking in the *Cid*, inceptive action being expressed by *conpeçar*, *pensar*, etc. with dependent infinitive. In our other texts *començar* appears frequently, particularly in the *Crónica*, where it is found on almost every page. The *Crónica* greatly prefers *a* to *de* with

its dependent infinitive, though the *de* construction occurs about forty times in one hundred pages. Sometimes the two prepositional uses will be noted side by side, *a* governing the infinitive nearest *començar* and *de* the more remote:

començo Mahomet a predigar su secta descubertamiente et  
de aluorosçar los pueblos contra fe de Cristo *Cron* 274a5  
començoles a dezir et de retraerles vnas cosas *Cron* 588b40  
los començaron a cometer et de los ferir *Cron* 764b3

The passages are naturally more numerous in which the same preposition occurs with succeeding infinitives:

, en comienço de su regnado començara de seer bueno et de darse  
a bien, començo luego de darse a mal *Cron* 304a40  
començo de correr et de fazerle mucho mal en la tierra *Cron*  
339b35  
començo de labrar la mezquita de Cordoua et de affortalezarla  
*Cron* 344b1  
començo de correr et de destroyr toda la tierra et de fazer  
en ella mucho mal *Cron* 358a39; also 244b16, 265b29.41,  
289b47, 391b8

The second infinitive does not need any preposition at all:

començo de quexarse mucho por ende, et nombrar a si mismo  
*Cron* 341a4  
E los del castiello començaron de lidar et ampararse *Cron*  
287b3

In the *Alizandre* etc., *començar de* is used especially in short, concise phrases, the connection between *començar* and the infinitive being close:

començo de çenar *Aliz* 363  
començo de dezir *Aliz* 926  
començo de feryr *Aliz* 1045  
començo de dezir *Aliz* 1190  
començo de clamar *Aliz* 1358  
comenzó de volar *SOria* 40  
Comenzó de traherla *SOria* 140  
començo de llorar *SDom* 363  
començo de hablar *Aliz* 648

començose de yr *Aliz* 1045  
començo de fuyr *Aliz* 1054  
començo de asomar *Aliz* 1287  
començo de plañer *Aliz* 1757  
comenzó de pujar *SOria* 40  
començol de rogar *SDom* 476  
començo . . . de amolar los dientes  
*Aliz* 1321

Other examples of *començar* with *de*-infinitive will be found in *Cron* 10b33, 12b39, 13a31.51, 13b24, 27b12, 192b47, 165a8, 231a34, 233a26, 265b3, 270b29, 285b2.8.31, 288a33, 289b14, 290b27, 291a32, 291b41, 304a42, 304b38, 306b9.42, 309b24, 315b49, 322b31, 323b6, 324b32, 327a2, 328a48, 335b5, 340b32, 341a4, 341b36, 349a31, 359a47, 360b44, 391b42, 397b24, etc.

### **cometer.**

Examples of *cometer* with infinitive are noted in the *Crónica* only. The *a*-infinitive is used in *Cron* 72a2: *muy grand miedo deuie auer de cometer a passar la.*

ni salie ninguno a ellos a cometer de ferir *Cron* 75b5

cometiol de lidiar *Cron* 81a11

por que . . . non se atrouiesse a cometer de fazer otro ta fecho *Cron* 86a45

como quisesse cometer de yr *Cron* 687a31

cometieron de combatir la çipdad et lidiarla muy de rrezio *Cron* 704b43

non osauan cometer de se meter a tan grant peligro *Cron* 738a33

. . . fuesen cometer de pasar por do estauan siete *Cron* 751b39

### **conpeçar (com-).**

With the exception of two instances in the *Alixandre*, the *Cid* is the only text offering examples of *conpeçar* with the *de*-infinitive. The *a*-infinitive is also noted with *conpeçar*. This verb is evidently a fusion of *començar* and *enpeçar*,<sup>1</sup> infrequent even in this period since only four examples are at hand outside of the *Cid*. The pure infinitive is not found with *conpeçar* at all.

conpeço de espolonar *Cid* 705

conpeçaron de llorar *Cid* 856

conpeços de alegrar *Cid* 1083

conpeço de guerrear *Cid* 1090

conpeços de pagar *Cid* 1201

conpeço de beuer *Alix* 2578

conpeço de clamar *Alix* 2184

conpeço de fablar *Cid* 1114, 1456, 3306

<sup>1</sup> *Cid* I, § 161, [2 and *Cid* II, *conpeçar*.

**contender.**

*Por-* and *en*-infinitives are also found with *contender*.

... siempre contiende de valer a cuitados,  
Gobernar los mezquinos, revocar los errados,  
Por tierras e por mares fer miraclos granados *Mil* 623

**cuydar.**

The regular infinitive construction of *cuydar* is without preposition. The use of *de* does not perceptibly change the sense of the locution. With *en*, the meaning becomes rather *to think about, to consider*: *estauan cuydando en escoger rey entressi*, *Cron* 230a30.

mas yo non lo afirmo, que cuydo de mentir *Alix* 2271

**cumplir.**

The *de*-infinitive is more often used as subject with impersonal *cumplir*.

algunas cosas que a ellos non cumplan de leuarlas *Cron* 637a22

**dar.**

The more frequent prepositional construction of *dar* is discussed under *dar a*, § 44. *De* occurs in very few instances, and these of slightly doubtful infinitive function. The two locutions noted with *de* in our texts are *dar de comer* and *dar de uestir*, both from the *Crónica*. The fact that *a* appears also with *comer* and *uestir* in approximately the same sense, though the function of the preposition is so different, indicates that the infinitive is to be taken as verb rather than as noun (*dauan a comer et a uestir*, *Cron* 642a40), since *a* regularly introduces a verbal infinitive expressing goal or purpose. A very similar situation is seen in *auer* and *ser* taking *de* and *a* with infinitive: *ouola a sacar*, *SDom* 416; *ouo de fablar*, *Alix* 363; *era a mouer*, *SDom* 692, etc. That *beber* may be used as a noun (here without preposition) is indicated by: *Diol beber tan amargo*, *Loor* 73.

dar de comer: *Cron* 523b34, 603a22, 706b41, 707a1

dar de uestir: *Cron* 534a37, 582b28

dar a comer: *Cron* 516a14, 517a43, 642a40; *Sig* 28

dar a uestir: *Cron* 642a40

### denegar.

et denego de enuiarles ayuda *Cron* 679a33

### desamparar.

desampararon aquellos de fazer la torre *Cron* 5a14

### dexar (-ss-).

The infinitive with *dexar* may be pure or have *a*, *de*, or *por* with it. The pure and the prepositional constructions are quite distinct in meaning, since without preposition *dexar* belongs to the *fazer* group, the causative verbs (in one case the pure infinitive has the usual prepositional sense: *por que veyen los vnos a los otros caher, por eso non dexauan su camino tener*, Alix 1091). With the prepositional infinitive (*a*, *de* and *por*), *dexar* has the idea of *ceasing*, etc. The difference in the resultant locution, whether *de* or *a* is used, is negligible, though the functions of the prepositions remain distinct. *De* as usual has the *relative* value so often seen with other verbs, since if it were the *de* of *separation*, hence privative, *a* could not be used in an equivalent locution. The *a* may well have its regular *place* signification. Both these senses have been also noted for the verbs of *beginning*, and fit just as well for the verbs of *ceasing*. *Dexar de* only occurs in our poetry four times, *dexar a* not at all. In the *Crónica*, the prepositional constructions are quite frequent at the end of chapters in some such formula as *agora dexa ell estoria de contar della, e torna a dezir de cuemo . . .* *Cron* 44a21.

non dexen por los muertos los biuos de lidiar *Alix* 1090

non dexo por dubda cosa de ensayar *Alix* 1160

Non dessó de deçir *Mil* 836

dexamos de fablar *Cron* 10b17

non dexo de quemar vna mala meaja *Alix* 1876

Also: *Cron* 19a29, 20a6, 20a35, 24a1, 25a28, 26b29, 27a47, 17b20, 18a48.

### **dubdar.**

This verb appears also with pure and *en*-infinitives.

non dubda de fallir *Alix* 55  
 pero dubdaua Etor de bien se demeter *Alix* 627  
 estos diablos non dubdan de morir *Alix* 2165  
 Dubdó Valeriano de levarlo consigo *SLaur* 89  
 mucho te dubdaries de yr a el fasero *Alix* 477  
 . . . que los que lo oyesen dubdasen de pecar *Alix* 2091  
 Dixol que non dubdase de fer su maestria *Alix* 2230

Also: *Cron* 40b41, 67b33, 67b40, 189a32, 402b37.

### **enpe(s)çar [em-].**

Like the other verbs of the group meaning *to begin* (*començar*, *conpeçar*), *enpeçar* shows an unsettled condition in the use of prepositions with the infinitive. *Conpeçar* is the only verb of this type favoring the *de*-infinitive, *començar*, and more especially *enpeçar*, preferably taking *a*. The pure infinitive occurs with *començar* and *enpeçar*, but not with *conpeçar*. With neither of these verbs does it at all rival the prepositional constructions, however.

enpesço de baldir menazas *Alix* 761  
 el buen enperador enpeço de fablar *Alix* 1819  
 enpeço de dezir vierbo de amistad *Alix* 2186  
 enpesço de mascarlos *Alix* 797  
 empezó de llorar *Mil* 517

Also: *Alix* 1814, 2060, 2132, 2422; *Loor* 44; *SDom* 649; *SMill* 150, 195, 219; *Cron* 309a48.

### **ensayar.**

The examples with *de* come from the *Crónica* only. The pure infinitive is also found with *ensayar*.

ensayaron de lidiar otra uez con los romanos *Cron* 225a7  
 ensayaron de leuantarse *Cron* 228a24  
 ensayaron de lidiar contra Vualia *Cron* 233b24  
 fuera muchas uezes ensayado de estoruarsse *Cron* 689a20  
 ensayaron de uenir *Cron* 700a2

**escoger.**

The *por*-infinitive is likewise noted with *escoger*.

escogieron de perder antes la franqueza que no la uida *Cron* 228a37

escogieron mas de seer desondrados . . . que non obedesçer al princep *Cron* 671b28

escogio el de auer mingua con los que la auien, et fincar en aquel tiempo con los freyres *Cron* 706b47

**esforçarse.**

Infinitive constructions of *esforçarse* also employ *a* and *pora*.

esforçosse de yr contra ellos *Cron* 22b12

**establecer.**

auien establecido entre si . . . del enuiar todas las coronas *Cron* 122b3

**fallecer.**

In sense, this intransitive verb may be classed with *dexar*, *finar*, *fincar*, *quedar*, and *çesar*, all taking *de*-infinitive. Of these *fallecer* and *finar* are the least in evidence in these texts.

nunqual fallecien de lo seruir et de lo guardar *Cron* 93b50

**finar.**

*Cf. fallecer* above.

non se fino de andar *Aliz* 1965

**fincar.**

*Cf. fallecer* above. *Fincar* is not common in any text, yet occurs once in the *Cid* and several times in the *Crónica*.

non fincan de andar *Cid* 1474

fincaua de conquerir *Cron* 72a47

non finco de derribar sinon lo que se podrie deffender con saetas  
*Cron* 575a24

non fincara por mi de uos ayudar *Cron* 599b29

non fincare por uos de lo demandar *Cron* 614a30

non finco de yr *Cron* 648a30

**husar.**

Los moros auien husado de seguir *Cron* 755b29

**judgar.**

judgaron de comer la carne ante que desamparar la tierra  
*Cron* 707a9

**membrarse (men-).**

*Membrarse* and *oluidarse* are excellent examples of verbs taking the *relative de*-infinitive. This is the only infinitive construction noted with *membrarse*.

se non membro ... de nonbrarle en aquella postura *Cron* 515a21  
 ... quese menbrassen ... de ayudar a los menores *Cron* 662b33

**mere(s)cer.**

The pure infinitive is much more frequent than the *de*-infinitive with *merescer*. The *a*-infinitive is also found. The confused subject in the first example below is to be remarked.

merecist de yazer el dios Anubis contigo *Cron* 113a23  
 merescio de seer llamado don Alffonso el Casto *Cron* 347a44  
 merescie bien de seer emperador *Cron* 348b52

**oluidarse.**

No other infinitive use occurs for this verb. Both *membrarse* and *oluidarse* are very rare in our texts.

vengo a uos por vna cosa que se oluido de uos dezir *Cron*  
 732b23

**pensar (-ss-).**

*Pensar* occurs several times with pure infinitive, once each with *a* and *por*, but is regular with *de*. Diez<sup>1</sup> considers *pensar de* as the paraphrase of an adverbial idea developed similarly to *acabar de*. Its meaning, however, is by no means clear in all cases. Menéndez Pidal gives the following comparative equivalents for Old Spanish. Usually *pensar de* has the *inceptive* sense of *disponerse a*, but it may depart from this enough to be equivalent to *ocuparse en*. Occasionally it appears doubtful if any sense at all is left in the locution, as in the case of *piénssanse de armar*, *Cid* 1135, where Menéndez

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, p. 215, 4.



Pidal thinks it may mean either *se aperciben a armarse*, or simply *se arman*. The customary recurrence of *pensar de*, among other set phrases in the *Cid*, certainly tends to detract from the inherent strength of the locution, but cannot hide its acquired *inceptive* force. At least a vividness is felt in its use which is foreign to the simple verb. Menéndez Pidal also assigns to his group of verbs giving a *perífrasis inútil*, besides *pensar de*, *querer*, *fazer*, *mandar* and *ir*, in large part doubtless because of their frequency of use. For a careful and thorough study of *penser de* in Old French, Luker's dissertation<sup>1</sup> will be found of value, as it is on the omission of *penser* that he bases the so-called *historical* infinitive in Old French. The frequency of *pensar de* evidently did not induce a similar construction in Old Spanish, however, probably because of the greater resistance of Spanish in general to the operation of syncope and allied principles. The independent infinitive is in fact extremely rare in any use (see § 22). But the locution *pensar de* is as common itself as could be desired. It is to be noted that there are far more numerous examples in the *Cid* than in any other text. It is also especially common in Old French in the epic type of poetry. In the *Alizandre* it occurs only about one-half the number of times it does in the *Cid*, though the *Alizandre* is nearly three times as long. Nor, on the other hand, is *pensar de* by any means as frequent in the *Crónica* as in the *Cid*, from which also it might be inferred that it was considered more fitting to the epic than to any other literary type, prose included. Abundant examples of the locution are cited below, more because of any interest in them reflected from Old French studies than because of their own inherent value. The most current *pensar de* locutions are: *pensar de adobar*, *pensar de andar*, *pensar de cavalgar*, *pensar de yr*.

Allí pienssan de aguijar *Cid* 10

penssemos de cavalgar *Cid* 320

pienssan de ensellar *Cid* 324

<sup>1</sup> *The Use of the Infinitive instead of a Finite Verb in French*. Columbia Univ. Diss., 1916.

- pensemos de ir nuestra vía *Cid* 380  
 pienssen de andar *Cid* 389  
 pienssa de cavalgar *Cid* 394  
 pienssan de cavalgar *Cid* 413  
 pienssan de enviar *Cid* 647  
 piéssanse de adobar *Cid* 681  
 penssedes de folgar *Cid* 1028  
 piéssanse de tornar *Cid* 1152  
 pensólas de adobar *Cid* 1426  
 Penssaron de adobar . . . el palacio *Cid* 2205  
 de cavalgar penssavan *Cid* 2609  
 Piéssanse de ir *Cid* 2644  
 Penssad, señor, de entrar a la cibdad *Cid* 3046  
 penso luego de dar *Aliz* 381  
 pensaron de folgar *Aliz* 435  
 pensadlo de lidiar *Aliz* 454  
 pensaron de feryr *Aliz* 587  
 pensarien de rrobar *Aliz* 724  
 pensaron de sallir *Aliz* 735  
 pensaronse . . . de aguisar *Aliz* 1073  
 piensa de caualgar *Aliz* 1313, 1316  
 pensauan todos de cameras prender *Aliz* 1536  
 penso luego de yr *Aliz* 1554  
 pensaron de fuyr *Aliz* 1691  
 pensaron de tornar *Aliz* 1737  
 pensalo de pelear *Aliz* 1786  
 pensaron de dolar *Aliz* 1994  
 piensa de cavalgar *Aliz* 2273  
 pensolo de guiar *SDom* 19  
 piensa la de uengar *SDom* 425  
 pensaron de serujr *SDom* 442  
 penso de pressear *SDom* 574  
 Desent amonestados que piensen de orar *Sac* 248  
 piensen bien de rogar *Sac* 248  
 piense Oria de ir a su logar *SOria* 102  
 Pensó de ir su via alegre e pagado *Mil* 213  
 pensemosla nos de servir e honrrar *Mil* 430  
 Desende el pensarie de ferlo buen christiano *Mil* 575  
 pensatla de guardar *Mil* 863  
 pensose de mover *SMil* 77

. . . pensaron de dolar,  
 Lo que era de sobra en luengo acortar,  
 Çimentar las iunturas, los pieses asentar *SMill* 227  
 piensesnos de acorrer *Loor* 223  
 pensemos de tornar *SLaur* 17  
 Pensat de almorzar *SLaur* 104  
 Pensaron los ministros malos de atizar *SLaur* 102  
 pensaron de los cometer de cada parte *Cron* 103b52  
 penso el . . . de afogar en donado a Octauia *Cron* 125b22  
 penso de yr a uedar gelo *Cron* 232b24  
 penssaron de andar *Cron* 414a45  
 penssat de ampararuos et defenderuos *Cron* 439b38  
 penssaron de caualgar et de yrse *Cron* 440a22

Also: *Cid* 227, 376, 391, 426, 432, 537, 643, 645, 949, 970, 1077,  
 1283, 1430, 1440, 1448, 1473, 1680, 1688, 1821, 2870, 2873, 2900;  
*Aliz* 375, 1613, 1723, 1726, 1947, 2172, 2217, 2274, 2275, 2378;  
*Sac* 293; *SDom* 579; *SMill* 227; *Duelo* 7; *Cron* 288b9, 293b9,  
 342b20, 526b27, 739a42, 764b36, etc.

### pleytar.

pleyteo de dar a Athila . . . la cibdat de Orlens *Cron* 234b30

### poner.

This interesting verb appears three times in the poetry and commonly in the *Crónica* with the *de*-infinitive. It has approximately the sense of *resolver*, *decretar*. It is found not infrequently joined with such phrases as *en su coraçon* and *en su voluntad*. The infinitive with *en* is also noted, but with a literal sense, in both verb and preposition: *Ponian toda femença en fer a Dios serviço*, Soria 13.

en vno lo han puesto de vencer o moryr *Aliz* 904  
 auie puesto de yr a Bracta çercar *Aliz* 1702

In the first citation above, the *de*-infinitive is really in apposition with *lo*.

Pusieron e iuraron de dar todas sazones,  
 A Sant Millan cada casa de dar tres pipiones *SMill* 461  
 auie puesto de non casar *Cron* 11b31

pusieron en sos coraçones de uencer o de morir *Cron* 19b27  
 puso en so coraçon de non se yr daquela tierra *Cron* 47b43  
 pusieron en sus uoluntades de destroyr Carthago *Cron* 49a9  
 pusieron . . . de tornar a ella e destroylla *Cron* 49a15  
 puso de fazer rey . . . a don Ramiro *Cron* 389a46  
 pusieron con ell de dargelos *Cron* 565a3  
 . . . ouiesse puesto de guerrear a don Alfionso *Cron* 682b37  
 pusieran con el de uenirle *Cron* 697a33

Also: *Cron* 40a3, 102b25, 117b35, 136b52, 293a35, 457a34.

### **prouar.**

prouo tres uezes de la matar a pozon *Cron* 124b43  
 . . . que prouauan ya de se comer unos a otros *Cron* 209b24

### **punnar.**

Similarity in sense and syntax is noted between *punnar* and *trabaiarse* with infinitive. The prepositions *de* and *en* are used with both. The *Crónica* is the only one of our texts yielding examples of either verb with infinitive, though in this they are comparatively abundant. With *punnar* and *trabaiarse* we have two very good examples of the *relative de-infinitive* (*relative to, in the matter of, etc.*).

punno de contender mas con Cipion *Cron* 23a20  
 punnaua de seruir a so tio *Cron* 106a34  
 punnaua de la componer de gestos much espantosos *Cron* 116a19  
 poco punnaremos de demostrar la estoria dellos complidamiente *Cron* 242b19  
 . . . et que punnassen de auer por amigo all emperador *Cron* 250b50  
 punno de auiar et de aluorosçar los pueblos *Cron* 269b7  
 punnaron de deffender se dellos *Cron* 269b39  
 mas punnaran de foyr *Cron* 289b26  
 . . . et punnasses de alçar te rey *Cron* 292b33  
 . . . et punnassen . . . de derramar por el su sangre *Cron* 293a3  
 punnaron de acoger se a la uilla *Cron* 314b43  
 punnaron los omnes de acoger se todos a ella *Cron* 315a9

Also: *Cron* 21b28, 22b7, 22b19, 48b49, 51a24, 51a28, 321b13,

324b1, 333b1, 382a16, 406a4, 413b16, 417b24, 552a15, 558b38, 607b6, 730a18.21.26, 730b8, 766a5.

### quedar.

With *de*-infinitive *quedar* forms one of the regular constructions of the *Crónica*, but elsewhere is not noted. *Fincar de* has much the same sense, but is not so frequent. It is interesting that the negative appears in nearly all passages having the *quedar* locution. No other infinitive constructions with *quedar* are at hand.

non quedaua de guisarse pora lidiar *Cron* 19b49

numqua quedaron de guerrear *Cron* 44b5

numqua quedaua de los matar e de los destroyr *Cron* 49b27

non quedauan de destroyr la cibdat *Cron* 50a55

nunqua quedaua de punnar en ello *Cron* 138b40

numqua quedo de estudiar *Cron* 157b46

no quedaron de dezir *Cron* 185b22

no quedare de orar *Cron* 195a38

numqua quedaua de andar en guerra *Cron* 213a7

ni queda de espantar las uezindades con los roydos *Cron* 236a40

non queda con su enuidia de uuscar le mal *Cron* 305a31

non quedo de guerrear con moros *Cron* 390a44

Also: *Cron* 40a41, 149b1, 236a36, 390a38, 458a37, 459b20, 484b8, 528a11, 553a23, 660a27, 734b50, 743b20.

### temer.

The pure infinitive is also found with *temer*. For similar sense and treatment, compare *dubdar*. The ethical dative reflexive is noted with *temer* more often than not: *temiosse de affrontarse con el*, *Cron* 665a48. The *Alixandre* and *San Millan* each offer one instance of *temer*. The rest are limited to the *Crónica*, a situation representative of many verbs taking the *de*-infinitive.

temien de caualgar *Alix* 1311

temie de peccar *SMill* 76

non uos temades de perder el seruicio *Cron* 394a24

ca de alcançarlos ninguno, non se temien *Cron* 411a15

ca se temie de perder el regno por y *Cron* 422a36

temiendose de matarse uno a otro *Cron* 466a15  
 se temien de perder toda la tierra *Cron* 557a15  
 temiendose de yr en perdicion *Cron* 749a37

The reflexives in most of the citations above seem to go with *temer*, not merely because of their position, but also because, when the infinitive takes a reflexive, the author does not object to two reflexive pronouns in close proximity to each other, as in *temiendose de matarse*. Theoretically, however, in some passages the reflexive pronoun may be considered as belonging to either *temer* or the infinitive, irrespective of its position.

#### **trabaiarse.**

For similarity of sense and syntax in *punnar* and *trabaiarse* with infinitive, see *punnar* above. The pure infinitive, and those with *en* and *por*, are noted with *trabaiarse*, though the *de*-construction is considerably the most frequent. The *Crónica* is again the only text yielding examples.

trabaiosse de ganar lo al *Cron* 16b27.  
 trabaos de cercar le alli *Cron* 58b50  
 el rey Artaz quisiera se trabaiar de auer guerra *Cron* 60b32  
 trabaos . . . de enbargar el fecho de Pompeyo *Cron* 62a20  
 trabaiosse de ganar del senado . . . *Cron* 62a43  
 trabaiaron se de foyr *Cron* 63b6  
 trabaos de meiorar su fazienda *Cron* 127a49  
 trabaiosse de lo auer por fuerça *Cron* 130a41  
 se trabaio de seer a plazer de todos los omnes *Cron* 138a54  
 non se trabaiaua de deffender la tierra *Cron* 169a39  
 se trabaiaua de meiorar ell estado dell emperio *Cron* 171a3  
 trabaiosse de lo engannar *Cron* 187a10  
 trabaiosse de conuertir a Arrio *Cron* 190b39

Also: *Cron* 152a45, 158a10, 183a36, 219a4, 245a44, 246a6, 250b53, 267b6, 273b6, 285a44, 308a30, 327b50, 331b26, 382a12, 384a28, 400a14, 451a12, 463a20.

#### **tratar.**

Trataron de sue regla quando fueron iuntados,  
 De reformar los viçios *SMill* 204

**usar.**

This verb, with infinitive, is employed as an emphatic substitute for the imperfect indicative, though by no means currently. The very common English equivalent is to be remarked: *a aquella iglesia misma usaua el rey . . . de yr a maytines*, *Cron* 490a22 (to that very church the king *used* . . . to go to matins). The *de*-infinitive is the regular construction with *usar*, though those with *a* and without preposition occur. Again the *Crónica* is unique in offering examples.

uso de fazer aquestas cosas *Cron* 123a29  
 usaua mucho de tirar de ballesta *Cron* 140a10  
 non usaua de ser a judgar nin dar juyzios *Cron* 387b21  
 . . . que usasse y de fazer ell officio *Cron* 544b21  
 usauan de uenir guerrear a Toledo *Cron* 707a19

THE *DE*-INFINITIVE AS OBJECT OF VERB LOCUTIONS

33. There is little difference in the function of the infinitive in this section and in the last, i.e. the infinitive is a *de*-object in both cases. There is, however, the essential difference that in the citations of this section the infinitive cannot be construed with any single verb. The infinitive must be considered as the object of the whole verb locution, as otherwise violence would be done to the evident sense of the passages. A good illustration is at hand in *auer en voluntad de*, where the *en voluntad* makes all the difference between the *necessity* or *possibility* commonly associated with *auer de*, and the *will* clearly present in *auer en voluntad de*. Another type in this group is illustrated by *touo por meior de morir que non fazer ninguna destas cosas*, *Cron* 38a13, where the sense is *to consider* . . . as . . . . Of this type may be mentioned *escoger por meior*, *fallar por bien*, *judgar por guisado*, *tener guisado*, *tener por mal*, *tener por meior*, etc. In such instances as *non lo tengo por seso averes tan granados*, *meterlo a aventura*, *Alix* 908, *meterlo* is in apposition with the *lo* preceding. If this *lo* were omitted, *meterlo* would be the object of *tengo por seso*.

Various paraphrases of simple verb senses are likewise noted in this group, e.g. *auer en uso* for *usar*, *auer en costumbre* and *auer por costumbre* for *ser acostumbrado*, etc. On the whole, the locutions of this section serve a considerable range of thought, and, because of their ease of adaptation to individual needs, they assist the language toward a greatly increased flexibility of expression. It is a conspicuous fact that the prose *Crónica* is the only one of these early texts yielding examples of their use with *de*-infinitive.

**auer a coraçon.**

This is the most frequent locution of its class. *Coraçon* is also associated with *tener*, *leuar* and *meter*; see below. The *lo* of *todos lo auien a coraçon de se matar*, Cron 288a13, being the object of *auien*, the infinitive is again in apposition with the object: see paragraph above.

. . . que yo auia tan a coraçon de guardar Cron 39b54  
 auiendo muy a coraçon de non dexar ningunos Cron 69a33  
 tanto auie a coraçon de se yr pora Roma Cron 129a18  
 ouo muy mas a coraçon de yr contra el Cron 132a24  
 auie much a coraçon de seruir a so tio Cron 107b33  
 auiendo muy a coraçon de acrescentar . . . el regno Cron  
 255a26  
 auiendo todos a coraçon de seruir a Dios . . . Cron 325a16

Also: Cron 59a33, 171a13, 190b50, 245a18, 288a13, 325a16, 341a19, 369a34, 474a39.

**auer en costumbre.**

auien . . . en costumbre de dexar los cabellos crecer Cron  
 90a13  
 auie en costumbre desquel nacieran baruas de las no traer  
 Cron 129b54  
 auie en costumbre de escoier oras sennaladas Cron 139a44  
 auie siempre en costumbre de los llamar tinnuela Cron 193b52  
 siempre auie el en costumbre de llamar a Ihesu Cristo Galileo  
 Cron 201a37  
 nunca-ouo en costumbre de omillarse a ninguna mugier Cron  
 340b4



**auer por costumbre.**

This locution closely resembles *auer en costumbre*. The same thought is expressed in *por esto auie costumbrado de traer . . . los cabellos de tras a la fuente*, Cron 92b51, where the *auie costumbrado* does not represent an ordinary pluperfect sense.

*auie por costumbre de se espantar entre suennos* Cron 92b47

*auie por costumbre de comer carne crua* Cron 126a36

*an por costumbre de alabarse quando son bienandantes, et de chufar et de fazer grandes nueuas de si et escarnescer a los otros* Cron 502b40

*aiuen por costumbre de degollarle* Cron 504b1

*auie por costumbre . . . de fazer su predicacion muy noble*  
*Cron 642a48*

**auer en uso.**

This locution paraphrases *usar*.

*ouieron . . . en vso de heredar los fijos en los bienes de los padres* Cron 357b20

**auer en voluntad.**

*ouiera en voluntad de passarse a Affrica* Cron 212a41

**escoger por mejor.**

*escogieron por mejor de morir* Cron 228a51

**fallar por bien.**

With *de*-infinitive *tener por bien* is more often noted than *fallar por bien*.

*fallaron por bien de auer entre si . . . sennos cabdiellos* Cron 86a12

**judgar por guisado.**

More frequent is *tener (por) guisado* below.

*judgando por guisado de dar omne a las uezes logar a la sanna que uiene* Cron 682b20

**leuar en coraçon.**

Other useful *coraçon* locutions include *auer a coraçon*, *tener en coraçon* and *meter en coraçon*, all with *de*-infinitive.

- leuaua Julio Cesar en coraçon de cometer . . . a Ponpeyo et  
 lidiar con ellos *Cron* 67a39  
 leuaua en coraçon de cobrar et cometer . . . a Julio Cesar  
 et lidiar con el *Cron* 81a37  
 leuaua en coraçon de matar all yerno *Cron* 181a52  
 leuauan en coraçon de me las desonrrar et de las ferir et de las  
 dexar *Cron* 619b30

**meter en coraçon.**

Cf. *leuar en coraçon* above.

- . . . que uos meta en coraçon de sacarle ende *Cron* 355a20

*Tener* is more generally utilized in locutions of this group than any other single verb, *auer* included, though the latter is quite frequent. *Tener* has the sense of *to consider*, *to take for*, in *tener por bien*, *tener por dura cosa*, *tener (por) guisado*, *tener por mal* and *tener por meior*, while in the following locutions *tener* is employed literally: *tener a voluntad*, *tener en voluntad* and *tener en coraçon*.

**tener a voluntad.**

- non teniendo a voluntad de fazer estonce lo que ellos recelauan  
*Cron* 749a19

**tener en voluntad.**

- tenien en voluntat de venir *Cron* 575b2

**tener en coraçon.**

*Auer a coraçon* occurs even more frequently than *tener en coraçon*.

- no tenie en coraçon de numqua tornar *Cron* 39b36  
 . . . non que touiesse en coraçon de lo complir *Cron* 378b19  
 tenie . . . en coraçon de yr *Cron* 64a21  
 teniendo el en coraçon de passar a Affrica *Cron* 234a3

Also: *Cron* 541b12, 557b22.

**tener por bien.**

Next to *auer a coraçon* this is the most frequent locution of this section. The use of *bien*, *mal* and *meior* is notable with such verbs as *tener*, *escoger*, *fallar* and *judgar*: *touo por meior de*

*morir*, Cron 38a13; *escogieron por mejor de morir*, Cron 228a51;  
*fallaron por bien de auer entre si . . . sennos cabdiellos*, Cron  
 86a12.

non touieron por bien de les foyr la batalla Cron 20a3  
 non tovo por bien de partille dAffrica Cron 23a15  
 touieron por bien de dexar aquella lauor Cron 28a12  
 touo por bien del yr ueer Cron 38b21  
 ternien por bien de « rey de las Espannas » . . . de mudarse este  
 nombre et llamarse « emperador » Cron 65a23

Also: Cron 36a37, 342b2, 349a4, 447a24, 447a26, 447a4.

**tener por dura cosa**, etc.

*Cosa* is extremely rare in these phrases, because the adjective, or adverb alone, suffices for the expression of the thought involved, and is less clumsy.

tenie por dura cosa . . . de lidiar con sus vezinos Cron 223a40  
 tenie por cosa desaguisada de dexar le assi la tierra Cron 223a42

**tener (por) guisado.**

*Por* is here expressed or omitted at will. *Guisado* is also noted in *judgar por guisado* and *tener por cosa desaguisada* with *de*-infinitive object.

no touiera guisado de lo seer en ninguno logar Cron 79b40  
 touieron por guisado de llamarlos « tribunos » Cron 86a19  
 non tenie guisado de salir a el Cron 254a27  
 non teniendo guisado de salir a ellos solo Cron 424b20  
 touo por guysado de auer linage de tan noble cauallo Cron  
 641a47

**tener por mal.**

tenie por mal de tenerse ell omne uicioso Cron 520b4

**tener por mejor.**

touo por mejor de morir que non fazer ninguna destas cosa  
 Cron 38a13

**tomar en uso.**

tomaron los cristianos en uso de dezir que . . . Cron 361a2

## THE DE-INFINITIVE WITH LEXAR, PROMETER, ETC.

34. Concerning the *de*-infinitive as accusative of thing with verbs taking a dative of person and an accusative of thing, Diez<sup>1</sup> says: "L'application de la préposition n'est rigoureusement observée qu'en français; l'italien n'y renonce pas volontiers, mais l'espagnol peut s'en passer avec la plupart des verbes." He then gives seven examples, of which only one contains *de*, and in one of which *de* is optional.

A conclusive criticism cannot be made of Diez's statement at this time, inasmuch as his work is not confined to any one epoch. Yet he would seem to put too much emphasis on the pure infinitive with these verbs, at least in so far as concerns the limited period herein studied. The preposition *de* is decidedly regular for such constructions in these texts. In fact, the verbs classed under this section take the pure infinitive very rarely, although *otorgouos lo yo*, Alix 1590, illustrates the type with ordinary objects. It is interesting, however, to note that *por* and *pora* with infinitive are found replacing the more clearly objective *de*-infinitive: see *iurar*, *ordenar*, and *prometer* below.

It will be seen that the class is not large in any case, and might well be included in § 32, dealing with the *de*-infinitive object without special regard to the indirect personal object, because this does not in any way change the function of the infinitive. This classification is followed for convenience of reference to Otto's work for the Portuguese and to numerous grammars in which such verbs form a distinct group. In general they are verbs of *ordering*, *promising*, *permitting*.

**consentir.**

This verb is an excellent illustration of the group, two of the three citations below having the personal object present. *Consentir* is also used with the pure and *en*-infinitives.

nim consentiesse a ellos de morar en la tierra Cron 250a43

non quiso el consentir de seerlo Cron 284a5

les non querie el consentir de fazer las trauessuras Cron 465a41

<sup>1</sup> Gram. III, p. 214.

**iurar** (y-, j-).

In only one instance is *yurar*(se) noted with personal object: *yuraron se de no seruille*, Cron 129a49. With weakened purpose present, but attaining approximately the same objective result, this verb may be used with *por*-infinitive: *ambos son sobre ti por matarte jurados*, Alix 1669.

Pusieron e iuraron de dar todas sazones,  
A Sant Millan cada casa de dar tres pipiones *SMill* 461  
yuraron de fazer quant aquellos mandassen *Cron* 46b49  
aunque juraria de esto non falsar *SDom* 427  
juraron de vengarse todos *Alix* 2535  
yuraron se de no seruille *Cron* 129a49  
yurara de seer le leal a ell et a la tierra *Cron* 292b46  
yuremos sobrella de la aguardar *Cron* 414b23

**lexar** (see *lexar*, § 20).

This verb occurs once with the pure infinitive, and once with *de*.  
de beuir con varones mi ley non me lexa *Alix* 1863

**ordenar**.

This verb, though comparatively rare with infinitive, and in the two cases below not having an indirect object of person present, is a verb quite naturally falling in this class. *Por*- and *pore*-infinitives also occur with *ordenar*: *ordeno su fecho pora salir*, Cron 604a38.

estos que ellos ordenauan de poner *Cron* 87a47  
ordeno de fazer . . . sus cortes *Cron* 540a15

**otorgar**.

No other infinitive use is noted with *otorgar*.

le otorgaua de ge le dar *Cron* 371a47  
otorgaron de lo fazer assy *Cron* 610b9  
Dios me a otorgado de vencer esta fazienda *Cron* 635b23  
tengolas todas por muy buenas, et otorgo de seer en ellas  
*Cron* 666a29

**prometer**.

This is the most representative verb of the group; nearly

all the citations below illustrate the use of the indirect object of person and direct object of thing (here replaced by the infinitive). *Por*-infinitive is noted with *prometer voto* in *Por partirme del mundo voto e prometido*, SMill 16.

. . . quel prometiera de fazer grandes onras Cron 39a50  
 me prometio de fer enperador Alix 1141  
 Prometiale Dario a buena fe e sana,  
 sy el canpo rrancase, de darle su hermana Alix 1386  
 prometieronle de seer leales Cron 284a19  
 prometieran a Paulo de ayudarle Cron 286b2  
 prometedme de me tener poridat Cron 428a20  
 prometi de non tornar a mi tierra Cron 428a28  
 auie yurado ya et prometido al rey . . . de ayudarle Cron  
 452b13  
 prometioles de fazer . . . Cron 624a15

#### THE *de*-INFINITIVE INDICATING CAUSE

35. Diez states that the infinitive may replace a noun in those locutions of verb and noun in which the relation of *means*, *cause*, *separation* or *aversion* is expressed by the preposition *de*. The truth of this statement can be tested in the constructions cited below, where the substitution of a noun for the infinitive can usually be made with no violence to the sense. The distinction between the *de* expressing *cause* and *means*, and the *relative de* becomes extremely slight at times: *desesperauan ya de poder escapar a uida*, Cron 75a14; *se gozaua siempre de matar omnes*, Cron 220b48. None of the locutions listed below (nor those cited under the *de* of *means*, § 37) occur very frequently in the early language, yet *cause* and *means* are basic senses of this preposition.

##### **alabarse.**

daqui adelante de guardar fe non me puedo alabar Cron 541b21

##### **auer verguença.**

si as uerguença de seer yo tu mugier tan linda Cron 43a39  
 deuias aver verguença de comigo te tomar Alix 2188

No preposition is used specifically with the infinitive in:

Io verguenza avria al mi fijo rogar *Mil* 780  
deurie auer verguença ante otros falar *Alx* 1261

### **cans(s)ar.**

This verb is represented only by its past participle.

cansados de matar *Cron* 136b2  
cansados de lidiar *Cron* 441a10

### **castigarse.**

Indicating *purpose*, the *pora*-infinitive is found with *castigarse*.

los que se castigassen de fazer mal *Cron* 3b33

### **desesperar.**

This verb might well be classed, perhaps, under the *relative de*.

desesperauan ya de poder escapar a uida *Cron* 75a14

### **dolerse.**

The double use of *de* before subject and infinitive is of particular interest in this instance:

doliendosse de tan nobles mugieres cuemo aquellas de perderse  
assi *Cron* 220a20

### **en(n)oiarse.**

se enoiaua de matarlos *Cron* 227a39  
de falar del buen Sancto no nos ennoiaríamos *SDom* 752

### **fallarse mal.**

de lexar lo a vida temiense mal fallar *Alx* 1722

### **perder.**

tu non perdrias nada de conmigo venir *SOria* 158

### **preçiarse.**

The *en*-infinitive also occurs with *preçiarse*.

se preçiauan de fazer de coraçõ bien *Cron* 703b35  
se preçiauan de disputar *Cron* 191a44

## THE DE-INFINITIVE INDICATES SEPARATION

36. The function of the preposition illustrated in this section is one most natural to *de*. It is not necessary to look for the subtle distinctions found in the *relative de*, or in the *de of cause and means*. In determining the members of this group, the simple test of reading the context with *de* in the sense of *from* may be applied. Thus the individual verbs vary all the way from *partir(se)*, with which the *de of separation* is quite literal and objective, to *curiar* and *guardar*, where a figurative interpretation may be necessary, although the original concept is clearly present. There is nearly always some sense of motion, objective or subjective, to be felt in these locutions, the best examples of this type of verb being *partir(se)*, *desuarse*, *levantarse*, *rancar*, *tornar*, *venir*. Less evident, though implied, motion appears in *despertar*, *guardar*, *tenerse*, and *escusar*. As a class, the verbs of *separation* are stronger and more frequent than those of *cause* or *means*.

**curiar.**

Bien te curieste, madre, de non lo façer *Loor* 20  
 dios curie mis amigos de prender tal mandado *Aliz* 221

**despertar.**

The only instance of *despertar* with the *de of separation* employs the infinitive as a noun.

desperto del dormir *Cron* 340b49

**detardarse.**

nos detardan de adobasse essas yentes cristianas *Cid* 1700

**desuarse.**

The identical use of noun and infinitive with the *de of separation* is to be remarked in this passage:

començo a desuarse de la paz de los romanos de non la querer  
 tener ni auerla con ellos *Cron* 234a20

**escusar(se).**

This verb appears both as transitive and reflexive.



escusolo Parmenio que por bien lo veyen  
 de yr a cometer los . . . *Aliz* 898  
 bien sabian escusarse de ganar enemigos *SDom* 6  
 non se pudieron escusar de non fazer lo que el Çid querie *Cron*  
 562a26

### **guardar(se).**

In one instance, *guardar* taking *de*-infinitive is a transitive, elsewhere reflexive. This verb found a most natural place in the early religious language.

Bien vos a Dios guardada de caer en es lazo *Mil* 532  
 guarda te de peccar *SDom* 313  
 en fechos e en dichos se guardan de pecar *Aliz* 2373  
 bien vos guardastes de darme hospedado *Sig* 33  
 guardando se . . . de non matar si non quanto menos el podie  
*Cron* 69b28  
 . . . que se guardassen . . . de aorar los ydolos *Cron* 120b51  
 guardosse de fazer mal a los cristianos *Cron* 168a1  
 punnaron en guardarse de fazer mal fecho *Cron* 392b39  
 uos guardedes de caer en yerro *Cron* 419b24

### **leuantarse.**

The pure infinitive and that with *a*, *por* and *pora* are found with *leuantarse* expressing various degrees of *purpose*. When *yantar* appears as the infinitive, as in the first passage below, it may be suspected of having largely a substantival force.

leuantosse el Çid . . . de yantar *Cron* 613b44  
 se auie leuantado de dormir *Cron* 632a49

### **partirse.**

All the examples of this verb with *de*-infinitive come from the *Crónica*. It is rather surprising that there are no illustrations at hand of *partir* used intransitively with *de*-infinitive, but actually all are reflexive. *Partirse* also occurs with *pora*-infinitive.

non les abondo partir se ellos dell imperio obedecer *Cron* 168a20  
 se partio Muça de fazerle mal *Cron* 365b22  
 non se partiendo aun de lidiar et de uuscarse mucho mal unos a  
 otros *Cron* 367b23

nunqua se partirie de guerrearle et de fazerle quanto mal  
pudiesse *Cron* 373b6

. . . que se non partiessen de guerrear al rey *Cron* 382a28  
partieronse de lidiar los unos de los otros *Cron* 558a23

**quitarse.**

quitosse . . . de guerrear *Cron* 325b6

se quitarie el rey . . . de demandarles ninguna cosa *Cron*  
557a13

non se quitarie de fazerle quanto mal pudiesse *Cron* 568a40

**rancar.**

De subir en cauallo non lo pudieron rancar *Aliz* 1722

**retenerse.**

non se retouo de fazer toda nemiga *Cron* 304b3

**tenerse.**

se podie el philosopho tener de fablar *Cron* 146b22

**tornar(se).**

Two examples of this construction come from the *Cid*. Menéndez-Pidal considers that the locution *tornar de* adds practically nothing to the simple verb. It is treated in this section, because it is evident that *tornar de* may be a verb of *separation*, even if it has little or none of this sense in certain individual cases. According to Menéndez Pidal,<sup>1</sup> *tornan de castigar*, *Cid* 383, is equivalent to *castigan*, while *se sonrrio* might well replace *tornós de sonrrisar*, *Cid* 2889. Such cases would indicate the *relative de* rather than the *de* of *separation*. The construction was so rare in any case that a conclusive argument cannot be based on examples, but it does appear somewhat radical to give *tornar de* no meaning whatever. If it is perchance true, as Menéndez Pidal states, that *querer*, *fazer*, *mandar*, *ir*, *tornar*, *pensar* and *conpeçar* became at times so weakened as to mean little or nothing, it would seem to be equivalent to maintaining that early Spanish might well have dispensed with some of its most racy and frequent expressions.

<sup>1</sup> *Cid*, § 161, 2.

One example of the *de* of *separation* with *tornar* is noted in the *Crónica*, but here the infinitive is marked as a substantive: *se torno a Burgos de su andar*, Cron 434a43. *Tornar* was of course more current with the pure infinitive and that with *a*, *por*, *pora* and *para* expressing *purpose*.

**venir (u-).**

More frequent occurrence than is actually at hand of *venir* with the *de*-infinitive of *separation* is to be expected from its frequency of use in other constructions. The locution did not progress as far in Old Spanish as it did in French, where it came to express an adverbial concept (*venir de* commonly rendered by *to have just*).

*vinia de leyer* *Aliz* 32

*quando de correr monte vengo o de caçar* *Aliz* 356

*Do se vinie el de complir su folia* *Mil* 81

*uinie de destroyr los cossarios* *Cron* 61b24

*todos los que fallaua que uinien de cenar de sus posadas, firielos muy mal* *Cron* 123a16

*uinie de coger su pan* *Cron* 129b24

#### THE DE-INFINITIVE INDICATING MEANS

37. For a discussion of the preposition *de* expressing *means* and *cause*, cf. § 35. Certain of the verbs listed below (*fartarse*, *gozarse*, *pagarse*) might be classed as well under the *relative de* or the *de* of *cause*; e.g. *Nos fartan de catarle*, Cid 3495, may be rendered *they are never satisfied by means of*, or *in the matter of, watching him*. This group, like that of *cause*, is quite small, and the individual verbs in it are all rare in this construction.

**adobar.**

*Comer* is the infinitive in each of the two cases of *adobar* with the *de* of *means*. *Comer* may be largely substantival in force.

*el Çid mando adobar de comer* *Cron* 601a11

*en adobar de comer . . .* *Cron* 704a40

**amenazar.**

amenazaron a Maria de la matar *Cron* 135a53

**dar pena.**

de lazar e de fanbre dauan li fiera pena *SDom* 355

**fartarse.**

Nos fartan de catarle quantos ha en la cort *Cid* 3495  
non se fartaua el rey de tener oio al Çid *Cron* 601a8

**gozarse.**

As a transitive verb, *gozar* is found once with pure infinitive.

se gozaua siempre de matar omnes *Cron* 220b48

**menazar.**

elli los menazaua de meter en farropeas *SDom* 735

**pagarse.**

de ujuir en tal guisa sabe Dios non me pago *SDom* 64  
se pagaua de comer *Cron* 93a4

Pagauasse muy poco de la uanagloria . . . ni de se mostrar por  
ufanero *Cron* 149b35

## THE DE-INFINITIVE WITH SUBSTANTIVES

38. This group is one of the most important of infinitive constructions. Theoretically it is almost unlimited. Practically there are only the limits of sense and connotation of the individual substantive. Aside from the ordinary attributive use of the *de*-infinitive with a noun (*seso de fablar*, Mil 691; *escuela de cantar*, Mil 354; *edad de casar*, Cron 654b20; *tiempo de casar*, Cron 22a34), probably the most frequently utilized type of this construction was the combination of verb and noun in approximately the same sense as a simple verb, and taking the *de*-infinitive as did also the simple verb. Some examples of this process have been noted above, but they come most appropriately under this section, as evidenced by the fact

that the noun element remains constant while the verb and modifiers of the noun vary: e.g. *miedo de* (with infinitive) in:

Non aiades *nul miedo* de caer en porfazo Mil 532  
 auja muy *grant mjedo* de seer iusticiado SDom 747  
 todos auien *miedo* de seyer mal andantes Alix 2005  
 por *miedo* de seer uençudos Cron 98b29  
 Cogieron muchos *miedo* de fazer tal peccado Mil 410

In these instances it is evident that each citation illustrates a distinct type of the *miedo de* (with infinitive) construction, three variously modified with *auer*, and one with *coger*, as the verb. Likewise, all are variants for the simple verbal concept of *fearing*, ordinarily expressed by *temer* or *dubdar*. Other illustrations of this principle are *ouieron acuerdo de fazer un teatro*, Cron 27b53, *auer acuerdo* being a variant for *acordar*; *non aues de salvarte deseo*, Mil 190, *auer deseo* being used for *desear*; *pavor avria de seer engannado*, Mil 641, *auer pavor* like *auer miedo* replacing *temer* or *dubdar*; *auer grant cobdiçia de salvar los errados*, Duelo 38, *auer cobdiçia* standing for *cobdiçar*. Another field of usefulness of the noun with *de*-infinitive was in prepositional phrases, where the noun employed necessitated the *de*-infinitive, if a dependent verb followed: *En logar de servirte*, SMill 104; *En uez de castigar los otros*, Cron 111b6; *por razon de sacar aun mas auer*, Cron 684a33. Frequency of use caused some of these locutions, as opposed to others of less frequent use, to be considered and felt as units (see §77, composed prepositions).

The noun and dependent infinitive may also express the *necessity* or *futurity* noted in the *ser* locutions with *a* and *de* (for which in Latin the gerund or gerundive was employed: *Carthago delenda est*): *es a yr*, Alix 656; *non son de creyer*, Alix 2194; *mucho es de temer*, Sig 69; and the *de*-infinitive with nouns in *fijas de casar*, Cid 2082; *varon de alabar et sabio*, Cron 718a50; *dardos . . . de alañar*, Cron 54a47. The active infinitive is rarer in this construction: *non so yo omne de alçarme con tierra*, Cron 419a10; *uarones de meter espanto*, Cron 691a13.

**acuerdo.**

Cf. *acordar* with *de*-infinitive, § 35.

ouo con ella su acuerdo de poblar Caliz *Cron* 11b4

ouieron acuerdo de desamparar toda la tierra *Cron* 18b47

ouieron acuerdo de fazer un teatro *Cron* 27b53

**armas.**

con armas de lidiar *Cid* 639

**bollicio.**

The infinitive is here marked as a noun.

del bollicio del lidiar *Cron* 60a21

**braueza.**

la enuidia e la braueza de seer contra el *Cron* 59a50

**carrera.**

serie carrera de auer todos paz *Cron* 410b15

**çiençia.**

on as çiençia De cantar otra missa *Mil* 225

**cobdiçia.**

*Auer cobdiçia* is a variant for *cobdiçar*.

havię grant cobdiçia de salvar los errados *Duelo* 38

de comer ovo copdiçia *Duelo* 64

**conseio.**

Non havia conseio de haver nul sabor *Duelo* 18

ouieron so conseio de despoblarla e yr buscar otro logar *Cron* 20a50

**dardos.**

dardos . . . de alançař *Cron* 54a47

**deseo.**

*Auer deseo* stands as a variant for *desear*.

De ganar la tu gracia siempre ovi deseo *SOria* 103

De furtarlo han grant deseo *Duelo* 187

non aves de salvarte deseo *Mil* 190

The customary *de* does not govern the infinitive in *Mil* 638, but is probably omitted for metrical reasons because of the proximity of *de vos*: *Ganar de vos empresto avria grant deseo*.

**desuergonçamiento.**

este desuergonçamiento de cantar *Cron* 122a41

**dia.**

Oy es dia de paresçer *Duelo* 190

Quando vino el dia de las bodas correr *Mil* 336

**duelo.**

con duelo de las perder *Cron* 93b32

**edad.**

a edad de seer caualleros *Cron* 346b44

en edad de casar et de fazer heredero *Cron* 654b20

**enoio.**

con enoio de yazer *Cron* 116a24

**entencion.**

a entencion de fincar el solo *Cron* 65b15

**escuela.**

escuela de cantar e leer *Mil* 354

**fecho.**

en fecho de armas et de caualgar *Cron* 93a26

**feuza.**

Ovieron grant feuza de seer allumnados *SMil* 323

**fijas.**

The *futurity* of the *de*-infinitive in *fijas de casar*, *Cid* 2082, is indicated by Menéndez Pidal's rendering of the phrase by *casaderas* (*marriageable*).

**gana.**

Three instances of *gana* with *de*-infinitive come from the *Milagros*.

por gana de aver *Mil* 239

Prísol al iudezno de comulgar grant gana *Mil* 356

con gana de en grant preçio sobir *Mil* 741

**guisa.**

con guisa de mouer se daquel logar *Cron* 36b31

**lumbre.**

Spiritu Sancto lumbre de confortar *SOria* 1

**manera.**

una manera de fazer duelo *Cron* 55a41

**mingua.**

por mingua de escreuir los *Cron* 87b20

**omnes.**

The active force of the infinitive in the first citation below is to be noted.

omnes . . . de bien razonar *Cron* 691a9

omnes de prestar *Cron* 536b30, 773b20

**ora.**

The infinitive has an object in two out of the three following illustrations of (*h*)*ora* with dependent infinitive.

Venida es la hora de prender la soldada *Mil* 136

agora somos en ora de rancar *Duelo* 89

en hora estaba de la alma echar *Duelo* 158

**paramiento.**

*Fazer paramiento* is used as a variant for *parar*.

fizieron paramjento de prouar este omne *SDom* 94

**pauor (-v-).**

*Auer pauor* and *auer miedo* are variants for *temer* and *dubdar*.

pavor avria de seer engannado *Mil* 641

Ouo pauor el preso de seer enbargado *SDom* 711

**periglo.**

sin periglo de se perder por tempestad *Cron* 48b20

**priessa.**

la priessa de se meter en ellas *Cron* 638a20



**razon.**

This noun is most useful in prepositional phrases.

- con razon de yr *Cron* 67a26
- por razon de lidiar *Cron* 70b16
- por razon de conquerilla *Cron* 27b25
- en auer razon de non seer y *Cron* 77b13

**sabor.**

*Auer sabor*<sup>1</sup> is a variant for a simple verb of desire: *desear*, *gustar*. *Sabor* is also notable in composed prepositional phrases.

- Avien . . . sabor de deportar *Mil* 355
- Todos avien sabor de ferlis mal treveio *Mil* 893
- de comer ovo copdiçia o sabor *Duelo* 64
- muy grand sabor dacaballe *Cron* 28a2
- por sabor de la acabar *Cron* 28a7
- a sabor de cavalgar *Cid* 1190
- sabor han de casar con sus fijas *Cid* 1902
- Sabor abriedes de seer e de comer en el palacio *Cid* 2208
- por sabor que avía de algún moro matar *Cid* 2372
- sabor a de velar en essa santidad *Cid* 3056

**semeiança.**

- e por fazer su semeiança de recibir bien . . . a Ponpeyo *Cron* 81b9

**tiempo.**

- Non vino tiempo aun de aqui habitar *SOria* 102
- Despues verná el tiempo de la siella cobrar *SOria* 102
- tiempo de regnar *Cron* 16b45
- tiempo de casar *Cron* 22a34

**uagar.**

The locution *auer uagar de* is approximately equivalent to the rare impersonal verb, *uagar*.

- ouieron uagar de enuiar por los otros *Cron* 45b48

**uso.**

- el uso de llamar dinero a toda moneda *Cron* 99a34

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Menéndez Pidal, *Cid* II, p. 834.

THE *de*-INFINITIVE WITH ADJECTIVES

39. The genitive of the gerund, as used with adjectives in Latin, was replaced by the infinitive in the Romance Languages: *cupidus dominandi*; *muy cobdicioso de sennorear*, Cron 66b25. Diez<sup>1</sup> finds the infinitive with the adjective not non-existent in Latin, but in any case extremely rare. In Old Spanish the relative *de* (*in the matter of*, etc.) is regularly employed to introduce the infinitive dependent on an adjective: *acuciosos de uenir*, Cron 49a44; *buena es de catar*, Sac 190. In instances where the Romance infinitive replaces the ablative of the supine in Latin (*mirabile dictu*, *facilis cognitu*), the action is merely named without definite indication of active or passive sense: *ligera de fazer*, Cron 420b11; *dulçes de veyer*, Alix 1616; *duro de traer*, Cron 129b1. If it is desired to define the action as passive, the auxiliary with the past participle is used: *merezien-tes erades de seer enforcados*, SMill 276; *mereçiente era de seer fostigado*, Mil 359. The *de*-infinitive depending on an adjective may of course on occasion have a subject or an object: *Yo non seria digna de veer tan grant gloria*, SOría 35; *duechas de comer los cuerpos muertos*, Cron 209b28; *ligera de mantenerla . . . un príncep*, Cron 692a27. The simple verb finds another circumlocution in the combination of *estar* or *ser* and adjective with *de*-infinitive: e.g. *estar cobdicioso* being a variant for *auer cobdiçia* and *cobdiçar* with *de*-infinitive. A number of past participles are included with the adjectives below, when it is evident that their adjectival force is proportionate to their verbal force: *numqua fuera ninguno atreuudo de las cerrar*, Cron 102b28; *eran uagarosos e descuydados de fazer ninguna cosa*, Cron 49a45; *de lidiar comigo tu fuste osado*, Alix 1763. The adjective is also found taking the infinitive with *por*, *pora*, *para* and *en*, the first three prepositions expressing various degrees of the purpose element so easily read into the infinitive relation, while *en* has a *place* or *manner* value (compare English *ready to go*): *prestos somos por conplir tu mandado*, Alix

<sup>1</sup> Diez, *Gram.* III, p. 216.

195; *nunca para comer vi cosa tan ligera*, Alix 799; *acucioso pora rezebir huespedes*, Cron 277a29; *En dar conseios malos era muy sabidor*, Mil 723.

### **adebdado.**

somos nos adebdados de amar a aquellos Cron 4a4

### **aguisado.**

(*Guisarse* is used currently with *de-*, *por-*, *pora-* and *para-* infinitives. *Aguisado* has the *por-* infinitive in *nos por defendernos somos mal aguisados*, Alix 873):

de vengar nuestra onta era bien aguisado Alix 416

non era aguisado de en fasienda entrar Alix 1279

Somos bien aguisados de tornar e fuyr Alix 1915

sy fuesen los escudos de fablar aguisados Alix 2181

Todas bien aguisadas de calzar e de vestir Soria 142

Also: Alix 2215; Mil 525.

### **apareiado (-j-).**

(It takes also the infinitives with *por* and *pora*).

apareiado era de obedesçerle et ayudarle Cron 648b8

de fer quanto mandares somos aparejados Alix 754

### **aspero.**

This is an excellent example of the Romance infinitive for the Latin supine. In phrases of this type the action is named without being defined as active or passive. The feeling, however, is often for a passive sense in transitive infinitives.

aspero de andar Cron 128a37

### **atreuudo.**

numqua fuera ninguno atreuudo de las cerrar Cron 102b28,  
124a24

### **brauo (cf. *aspero* above):**

ca era pauroso e brauo de passar SDom 229

**bueno** (cf. *aspero* above. *Bueno* also takes infinitive constructions with *por*, *pora* and *para*).

bueno de escriuir *SDom* 335

bien bueno de rezar *Mil* 262

buena de entender *Sac* 107

buena es de catar *Sac* 190

**caro** (cf. *aspero* above).

es muy cara de fazer *Cron* 619b25

**çertero.**

This is a good example of the *relative de* with infinitive.

De exir de lazerio estaba bien çertero *SMil* 294

**ciego.**

This may be taken as either a *relative* or *causal de*-infinitive.

tanto estan ciegos de non saber *Cron* 185a20

**çierto** (cf. *certero* above).

çiertos de auer batalla *Cron* 759a40

çierto fuese de lo seer *Cron* 765a25

**cobdiçioso.**

The simple verb, *cobdiçar*, is replaced occasionally by *estar* or *ser cobdiçioso de*.

de tornar a elli estaban cobdiçiosos *Duelo* 65

muy cobdiciosos de auer el sennorio *Cron* 57b9

muy cobdicioso de sennorear *Cron* 66b25

**contrario** (cf. *aspero* above).

era la gota contraria de sanar *SDom* 416

**delantero.**

De exir al torneo tu seras delantero *SMil* 287

**delectoso** (cf. *aspero* above).

muy sabroso et muy delectoso de comer et de beuer *Cron* 266b6

**derechero** (cf. *aspero* above).

muy derechos de onrrar et de temer *Cron* 691a14

**desesperado.**

desesperados de mejorar en su fazienda *Cron* 552a15  
 son ya desesperados de nunca te poder sanar *Cron* 577a17  
 eran desesperados de poder passar tiempo nin de atender al rey  
*Cron* 586a36

**digno.**

This is another excellent example of the *aspero* type.

A Barraban pidieron digno de iusticiär *Duelo* 72  
 El confessor glorioso, digno de adorar *SDom* 253  
 Yo non seria digna de veer tan grant gloria *SOria* 35

**du(e)cho.**

duechas de comer los cuerpos muertos *Cron* 209b28  
 no eran duchos de obedecer a ningun sennor estranno *Cron*  
 210b48

**dulçe** (cf. *aspero* above).

Los fillos e las fillas dulçes son de veyer *Alix* 1616

**duro** (cf. *aspero* above).

duro de traer *Cron* 129b1

**enoiado.**

This participle of *enoiar* takes the *de*-infinitive of *cause* or *relation* in the three examples below.

enoiados eran de lo tomar *Cron* 727b17  
 enoiados eran de lo oyr et de loallo *Cron* 122b17  
 enoiados de uender catiuos *Cron* 136b2

**feduzado.**

de tornar mejorada feduzada bien era *SDom* 688

**fermoso** (cf. *aspero* above).

de paresçer fermosos *Alix* 847, 970  
 hermosa de catar *Cron* 146b38

**feuzante.**

fueron bien feuzantes de ganar el rregnado *Alix* 1143

**fuerte** (cf. *aspero* above. Although both noun and adjectives are used in this instance, the sense seems to permit construction of *seruir* with the adjectives).

semeiaua los esquiua et muy fuerte sennora de seruir *Cron* 260a33

**graue** [-v-] (cf. *aspero* above. *Graue* and *grieue* are among the few adjectives used frequently with *de*-infinitive).

graves de acordar *SMill* 475

tales que por a Orfeo de formar serien graves *Aliz* 2117

graue de uencer *Cron* 161b21

grauas de contar *Cron* 765b28

Also: *Cron* 192b48, 619b1.

**grieue** (All six examples of *grieue* with *de*-infinitive occur in the *Crónica*. *Graue* and *grieue* are in the category of *aspero* above).

serie muy grieue cosa de contar *Cron* 20a46

grieues son de fazer *Cron* 50a42

era grieue dacordar *Cron* 50a51

serien muy grieues de dezir *Cron* 272a20

serie . . . grieue de leuar *Cron* 506b23

eran . . . grieues de complir *Cron* 694b8

**guisado** (*Por*- and *pora*-infinitives are also found with *guisado*: *guisado pora recebir la su fe*, *Cron* 103a23).

guisados de lo fazer *Cron* 38a28

de ir somos guisados *Cid* 1060

De ir en romeria estaban mal guisados *Mil* 887

. . . guisado fuesse de uengar se dellos *Cron* 54a8

**ligero** (cf. *aspero* above).

fazese muy ligero de traer *Cron* 54b7

ligera de fazer *Cron* 420b11

ligero de tornarse dello *Cron* 451a4

The infinitive has subject and object: *non serie ligera de mantenerla et gouernarla un prinçep*, *Cron* 692a27

**liuiano** (used also with *pora*-infinitive).

liuiano de creer el mal *Cron* 451a3

de comer liuianos *Aliz* 797

**maestro.**

fue de pintar muy maestro *Cron* 121b51

**malo.**

Like *bueno*, *malo* is in the *aspero* group of adjectives. It is not so frequently used with infinitive as might be expected from its sense, the *Alixandre* being the only text to specially favor it in this construction.

somos gentes ligeras, malas de conquistar *Aliz* 1915

son . . . malos de rreferir *Aliz* 2056

de garesçer muy mala *SDom* 410

Also: *Aliz* 2347, 2191.

**osado.**

This is the most frequent adjective, participial or otherwise, taking the *de*-infinitive construction. The infinitive is even found without preposition, a use particularly rare with adjectives: *Nunca mas fo osado al monge escarnir*, *Mil* 480; *Non seria osada la razon empezar*, *Mil* 780; *castigat uuestros fijos que non sean osados en sembradas ajenas entrar con sus ganados*, *SDom* 469. There is the possibility of the omission of *de* for metrical reasons in the three instances above, as there was in the case of the preposition *a* discussed under *auer a*. It seems that neither of these very common prepositions was indispensable in a verse, if the locution employed was frequent enough to carry the sense with it. *Osado* was doubtless so familiar that whether *de* introduced the infinitive or not, the sense was quite clear.

de valerli osadas *Mil* 438

de fablar antel Rey, ¿qui uos fizo osado? *SDom* 142

de vestyrlo osado *Aliz* 92

osado de paresçer *Aliz* 475

... non era Sysongarabis osada  
 de demandar al rrey cosa tan señalada *Aliz* 1569  
 de fincar en el plano non fueron mas osados *Aliz* 1697  
 non seran sola mente de contrastar osadas *Aliz* 1831

Also: *Aliz* 1168, 2089, 2212; *SDom* 765.

### **pensado.**

Two instances of this interesting variant of the *pensar* idea are noted in the *Signos*.

De catarlo nul omne sol non será pensado *Sig* 7  
 Mas de fablar ninguno solo non sera pensado *Sig* 17

### **pesado.**

This participle of *pesar* is noted with *de*-infinitive in two instances of the *aspero* type.

Dizen una fazaña pesada de creer *Aliz* 741  
 un mal muessio pesado de tragar *Duelo* 35

### **poderoso.**

The preposition *de* is omitted in this paraphrase of the *poder* idea: *non fue poderoso el dient enti poner*, *SDom* 769.

cuemo es poderoso de los dar, assi es poderoso de los toller  
*Cron* 91a52  
 poderoso de dar et de toller *Cron* 402b14

### **rreçelador.**

muy rreçelador de en ninguna razon yr contra ella nin pasar  
 contra los sus mandamientos *Cron* 771b30

### **sabidor** (found also with *en*-infinitive).

muy sabidor de armas e de caualgar *Cron* 138a20

### **sabroso.**

Both examples of *sabroso* have *oyr* as the infinitive, and are similar to *aspero* in use.

bel miraglo . . . sabroso de oyr *SDom* 335  
 . . . sabroso de oyr *SMil* 321

### **seguro** (found also with *pora*-infinitive).

seguros de nunca aver mal *Sig* 58



**tenudo.**

This analogical participle of *tener* is current only in the *Crónica*.

por si sera tenudo de fazer iusticia Cron 142b33  
 tenudos somos de aguardarte et de te servir Cron 447a29  
 tenudas egualmientre de uengar la sangre de sos maridos Cron  
 219a2  
 non fue tenudo de guardargela despues Cron 515a23  
 non era tenudo de guardar lo que pusiera con ellos Cron  
 587b30  
 fue tenudo del ayudar et guiar en todos sus fechos, et del adelan-  
 tar et puier en todas ondras Cron 771b41

**trabaioso** (cf. *aspero* above).

tierra . . . trabaiosa de conquerir Cron 69b49

**vozero.**

This is a good example of the *relative de*-infinitive with adjectives.

fue vozero de demandar los derechos Cron 157b39

## THE INFINITIVE WITH A

The *a*-infinitive is less varied, and presents less subtlety of sense and function than the *de*-infinitive. While *de* in its *relative* sense lost much of its original force and was extended to numerous verbs not normally taking a *relative* connection with the dependent infinitive, *a* preserved and strengthened its original force. It extended its use to a much larger number of verbs than those taking it in the earliest period of Spanish, yet *a* kept its sense intact. As shown by Meyer-Lübke<sup>1</sup> *ad* in Latin expressed *proximity in space*. From this it came with verbs of motion to express *direction toward* an object. This concept in turn naturally broadened its usefulness to include the *goal* and even the *purpose* of an action. And here, indeed, are seen practically all the elements of the *a* with infinitive in

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, § 390. See also Hanssen, *Gram.*, pp. 292-297.

Old Spanish, all developing naturally and easily out of the original concept of proximity. With transitive verbs, this idea of proximity generally explains satisfactorily the use of *a* with verbs normally taking the object infinitive. The presence of *de* or *a* is not at all natural to the expression of the object relation between infinitive and finite verb, since in fact the preposition breaks any real objectivity and substitutes for it an essentially distinct relation. Thus *començar* with *de*- or *a*-infinitive evidences a different point of view from that to be felt in the same verb with its pure infinitive object: to begin *in regard to*, *in the matter of* . . . , or to begin *at* . . . instead of to begin *it*. The class of verbs taking the object infinitive and coming to employ *a* with it, is much smaller than the group taking *de*. With intransitive verbs of motion *a* had an unrivalled function in indicating the *goal* of the motion (*andar*, *yr*, *cavalgar*, etc.). These verbs took the pure infinitive in the earliest period of the language, but it was not long before *a*, which was stronger and more explicit, surpassed the pure infinitive in most of this territory (*Issió a reçibir las*, Mil 169; *mouieron a lidiar*, Alix 532; *Vayamos posar*, Cid 1531, etc.). With reflexive verbs, and transitives having an object present, *a* also had a normal field of development, so that these classes, as well as the intransitives, are strongly represented in our texts (e.g. *darse* and *tomarse*, *ayudar* and *poner*, *a* indicating *goal*: *dieron se a guarir*, Alix 734; *ayudol . . . a armar*, Cron 341a45). A group rich in examples and offering a number of interesting problems to be taken up later is that of *auer* and *ser* with the *a*-infinitive.

An important fact concerning the development of the *a*-infinitive is that it followed closely the treatment of the pure infinitive in several of its uses. Both took the object-infinitive (if this somewhat inaccurate term can be applied to the *a*-infinitive with verbs like *començar*), both expressed *goal* and *purpose* with intransitives and reflexives. Likewise both were used with *auer* and *ser*, though with *auer* the later limitation of the pure infinitive to expression of *futurity* and the *a*-infinitive

to that of *necessity*, make the similarity less apparent. Noting, however, these facts for the pure and *a*-infinitives, Lachmund divided his treatise on the *Infinitiv im Altfranzösischen* into two chapters only: *I. Reiner Infinitiv (und Infinitiv mit à)*, and *II. Präpositionaler Infinitiv*. The pure and the *a*-infinitives are not the same, and cannot be adequately treated in the same section. Instead of being in harmony with each other in the early period of the language, they were rather inimical to each other. The *a*-infinitive was striving to win over the territory of its older and more primitive rival, and to a large extent succeeded in so doing, at least in those phases of the pure infinitive varying from *goal* to *purpose*. Hence the effort should be made to distinguish clearly between these two categories of infinitives rather than voluntarily to fuse them. And there were several real distinctions between them, of which the most important follow:

1. The infinitive as subject was quite frequent and varied when pure, while with *a* it was practically non-existent: *cuydar non es saber*, Alix 1728; *les conuinie a dexar de combater se*, Cron 71a23.

2. Most of the verbs taking the pure infinitive as object did not admit the *a*-infinitive, because the pure infinitive was felt to be the real object of the action with no admixture of other senses such as *goal* and *purpose* (cf. *querer*, *poder*, *mandar*, *fazer*, etc.): *fizolo quedar*, Alix 492; *Veol . . . morir*, Loor 78; *non lo osaua catar*, Alix 36.

3. With the intransitives of motion, the reflexives, etc., though the concept of *goal* was present in the pure infinitive, it was felt to be weak, while with the *a*-infinitive it was strong and merged more closely into that of *purpose*: *hir los hemos fferir*, Cid 1690; *vas a rescebir grant gloria*, Alix 2494; . . . *se ayuntassen adefender la fe*, Cron 449a46.

4. With the relative, interrogative, and comparative particles, the pure infinitive had a large field uninvaded by the *a*-construction: *non se sabien que fer*, Mil 396; *non sauemos do yr*, SDom 362.

5. The *temporal* use of *a*, coming from its earlier *place* significance, is unknown to the pure infinitive (see § 2, treating the infinitive as substantive): *al tirar de la lança*, Cid 3686; *Al salir de la missa*, Cid 2070.

#### THE A-INFINITIVE AS SUBJECT

40. Meyer-Lübke<sup>1</sup> lists *conuenir* as the only verb in Spanish taking the *a*-infinitive as subject. From the evidence this seems to be true, inasmuch as with *conuenir* the real subject of the action is made an indirect object in the same manner as with the impersonals discussed under the pure and the *de*-infinitives (see § 9 and § 28), while the other verbs take the usual personal subject. It is evident that the preposition *a* was not so well suited to introducing the subject-infinitive as was *de*, since it could not weaken its sense sufficiently; i.e. it could always be felt as an integral part of the sentence, thus somewhat detracting from the prominence desired for the infinitive. Examples of *conuenir* with *a*-infinitive are not rare in the *Crónica*, but are not noted in any other of these texts.

. . . quel conuenie a auer priuança Cron 427b18  
 esto conuino a sser por la muerte de don Aluar Perez Cron 740a7  
 por fuerça les conuenie a recibir y danno Cron 762b25  
 uos conuiene desta guisa a uenir con armas Cron 67b6  
 les conuinie a dexar de combater se Cron 71a23  
 uos conuiene a fazer uuestra uida Cron 77a11  
 conuiene a saber Cron 482a27, 704a7, 716b4, 665a10

#### THE A-INFINITIVE AS OBJECT

41. The group of *a*-infinitives as object of the action includes about fifteen verbs, thus constituting a very much smaller group than the corresponding construction under *de*. The apparent reason for this is, as suggested above, that the force of *a* is persistent, while that of *de* is evanescent in such locutions. Thus, in the object group, with *començar*, *conpeçar*,

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, § 340.

*empeçar* and *dezar* the locative sense of *a* is predominant (*place where*), while with *alcançar*, *cobdiçar*, *cometer*, *derrancar* and *esforçar* there is implied or expressed *motion toward* something (for examples, see individual verbs below).

Some verbs were strongly influenced to take the *a*-infinitive by the subtle, and usually indefinable, forces of analogy with other verbs to which the *a*-sense was entirely congruous. For instance, *deuer* is found with the *a*-infinitive, yet it would seem that this verb was so prevalingly pure in its infinitive relations, that even the occasional use of the *a*-infinitive would have been thought undesirable. The sense and frequency of the verb itself would appear to exact an infinitive-object with no limitations rather than the same object limited by a preposition expressing *direction*, *goal*, or *place where*. It is of interest, however, to note these prepositional influences working one against the other for supremacy within a given field of expression, and the gradual success of one or another of them to the partial or complete suppression of the rest. Outside the object group with *a*, it will be seen that, along with a certain tendency to develop the *goal* element of *a* into that *purpose*, there is almost perfect harmony between verb and preposition (in the groups of intransitive verbs of motion, transitives, reflexives, *auer* and the like): *anda a furtar*, Alix 766; *se ayuntaron . . . a fazerle grandes cortes*, Cron 644a7; *esforçosse a fazelles quanto mal pudo*, Cron 30a37; . . . *quel ayudarie a auer Denia*, Cron 548a24; *ouola a sacar*, SDom 416.

#### **alcançar.**

alcanço ella muy bier a atargelo Cron 114a32

#### **aprender.**

This verb is also noted with *de*-infinitive.

seyendo grant aprisiera a leer cartas Cron 199a44

#### **cobdiçar.**

The pure, *a*-, *de*- and *por*-infinitives are found with *cobdiçar*.

cobdiçiaua mucho a ueer la su muerte Cron 429a2

**començar.**

The pure and *de*-infinitives were also used with *començar*. In the period of our texts the struggle between *de* and *a* for use in this locution was at its height. In the *Cid* there is no evidence of *de* with the infinitive depending on *començar*, but in the *Santo Domingo* and the *Alizandre*, *de* does appear not infrequently. In the *Crónica*, *de* is common, though it never occurs as often as *a*. In fact, in the same sentences the two appear side by side in the *Crónica* (see § 32, *començar*). This indicates that it was not a matter of very great moment to the writer whether *de* or *a* was used with *començar*, and that to him there was nothing incongruous even in using both of them together. Probably the ever-increasing popularity of the *de*-infinitive in its many uses accounts in part for its sharing in the *començar* construction with *a*. It will be remembered that the same rivalry existed between *de* and *a* with *comencier* in the Old French of the period:

començo alabrar por dexas el pedir *SDom* 107

començo arogar *SDom* 192

començo arogar lo avna grant dulçor *SDom* 391

començo allorar tan aturada mente *SDom* 392

Començo li vn monge . . . los sanctos exorzismos . . . aleer  
*SDom* 691

queria començar a reuerter su saña *Aliz* 197

començo el buen omne en su cuer a tornar *Aliz* 284

començo de alli las tierras todas a mesurar *Aliz* 286

començo a feryr . . . , derrocar . . . *Aliz* 561

Començaron . . . a luchar *Aliz* 573

El arbol que tenprano comiença a florecer *Aliz* 764

començol vn dicho malo a retraher *Aliz* 1044

començos a desfer *Aliz* 1139

Also: *Aliz* 174, 561, 573, 1180; *Cron* 4b40, 5a20, 6a50, etc.

**cometer.**

The *de*-infinitive is also used with *cometer*.

muy grand miedo deuie auer de cometer a passar la *Cron* 72a2

**conpeçar.**

Three out of the four cases of *conpeçar* with *a*-infinitive come from the *Cid*. This verb is a compound of the two other verbs meaning *to begin*, *començar* and *enpeçar*, as discussed by Menéndez Pidal.<sup>1</sup> The preposition *de* is also noted with *conpeçar*, occurring eight times as compared with the four of *a*. This is contrary to the habits of other verbs of *beginning*, which affect the *locative a* more often than the *relative de*.

conpeço a dezir mucho villano prouerbio *Aliz* 1347

conpeçó mio Çid a dar a quien quiere prender so don *Cid* 2115

conpieçan a regebir lo que el Çid mandó *Cid* 2585

Essora les conpieçan a dar ifantes de Carrión *Cid* 2735

**deuer.**

The pure infinitive is exceptionally regular with *deuer* in these texts. It was remarked as a conspicuous fact under *deuer* with pure infinitive (see § 14), that *deuer* with *de*-infinitive does not occur in the *Cid*, Berceo's poems, or in the *Crónica*. The *a*-infinitive, however, is found with *deuer* in three instances from the *Crónica* (twice having *saber* as the dependent infinitive).

deuedes a saber que . . . *Cron* 453b17

Et uos deuedes a saber que . . . *Cron* 733a25

non es cosa que deua omne a creer *Cron* 739a27

**dexar.**

This verb occurs most often in Old Spanish with pure infinitive in the factitive sense already described in the *fazer* group (*to leave, to let*). With the prepositions *a, de* and *por*, quite a variation in sense is found in *dexar* and infinitive (*to cease, to leave off*). It was probably not the *de* of *separation* that was associated with *dexar*, but rather that same *dim relative de* so easy to utilize in numerous ways (*to leave off in regard to . . .*), since it was the *relative de* that permitted *a* frequently to be used in its place, while the *de* of *separation* or the *de* of *means* and *cause* stood for senses that *a* could not participate in.

<sup>1</sup> *Cid* I, § 161, [3].

Thus *a* is found with *dexar* and infinitive in six instances from the *Crónica*, the combination having the same sense as the *de*-locution. The *a* had apparently a *place where* relation at first, as it did with *començar*, etc. In one instance the pure infinitive is equivalent to the prepositional use: *por que veyen los vnos a los otros caher por eso non dexauan su camino tener*, Alix 1091.

agora dexa la estoria a fablar del Çid . . . et torna a contar del rey Cron 643b5

agora dexamos a fablar desto . . . et diremos como al infante . . . acaescio Cron 725a18

dexa aqui la estoria a contar del infante . . . et torna a dezir del rey Cron 725b14

otros logares menores, cuyos nonbres dexamos a contar aqui Cron 736a40

dexemos . . . a fablar destes . . . et digamos de lo que los moros fizieron Cron 754a10

de los que dexamos a contar Cron 242b14

### **enpeçar (em-).**

The pure and *de*-infinitives also occur with *enpeçar*, though the construction with *a* is by far the most frequent. No instance of *enpeçar* with infinitive is noted in the *Cid*, but other texts offer it regularly. In the *Cid*, *conpeçar* and *començar* are used in its stead.

enpeço a mostrar que serie de grant prez Alix 7

enpeço a guerrear Alix 145

enpeçolos . . . a desordyr Alix 165

enpeçola . . . a lidiar Alix 202

enpeço a mandarse Greçia por vn señor Alix 229

est capitulo enpieçan arezar Sac 114

Empezaron . . . a sobir Soria 41

Empezolas . . . a seguir Soria 41

empezós a desprunar SMill 14

empieçe a contar Mil 47

Ante que empezasse a sobir ennas gradas Mil 470

empezó a deçir Mil 476

Empezoli a dar de grandes palancadas Mil 478



Also: *Alix* 758, 943, 946, 963, 1478, 1556, 1896, 1962, 1978 (*ad*), 2278, 2552; *SMill* 76, 196, 290, 295; *Mil* 380, 480, 548, 607.

### **ensennar.**

ensennauan las a usar de las armas *Cron* 219b48

ensenno los a seer mansos *Cron* 222a23

. . . quel ensennara a creer en la fe de Nostro Sennor Dios  
*Cron* 263b31

. . . agradeſcer que me enſeñeſte las artes todas a entender  
*Alix* 38

### **entender.**

*En*-infinitive also occurs with *entender*.

entendien ya a fazer tuertos *Cron* 705a16

### **esforçar.**

This verb, more often used as a reflexive, takes *de*, *a* and *pora* with the infinitive.

. . . rentas ningunas pora esforçar a defenderse *Cron* 560b31

### **merescer.**

The constructions with *a* and *de* are rare, *merescer* normally taking the pure infinitive.

merescio a auer sennorio *Cron* 467b53

tales que merescan a ser pareios de condes *Cron* 622a35

### **penssar.**

See Menéndez Pidal, *Cid* I, § 161, [3. There is only one example of the *a*-infinitive with *penssar*. The regular construction has *de*, with an occasional instance of the pure infinitive.

pienssan a deprunar *Cid* 1493

### **usar.**

The pure and *de*-infinitives are found with *usar*.

usaran los clerigos a ueuir en aquella guisa *Cron* 338a1

comenzaron a vsar a fazer grandes mortandades *Cron* 667a50

usaron lo a beuer algunos dias *Cron* 30a52

THE A-INFINITIVE INDICATES GOAL WITH INTRANSITIVE  
VERBS OF MOTION

42. No violence is done to the natural function of the preposition with these verbs (*place where, to which, etc.*), nor is it necessary to read below the surface to understand its sense. That the *a*-construction ran parallel with the pure infinitive in this particular group, and that it gradually superseded the latter, except with a small number of verbs that still maintained the older custom of taking the infinitive pure, has already been shown in § 21. The preposition is, however, much more flexible than might be supposed, since there are perceptible several different degrees of the concept called *goal* by the grammarians merging from time to time into that of *purpose*. It is weaker than the *purpose* expressed by *por*, *pora*, and *para*, yet it is undoubtedly a real and natural outgrowth of the original *goal* sense of *a*. There was sufficient virility in *a* to enable it on occasion to govern its infinitive with little or no dependence on an individual verb (i.e. in clausal dependence): *iban a la iglesia a la missa oír*, Sac 285; *Fue a Sancto Domjngo amerced li clamar*, SDom 607; *passo allent la sierra a agosto coger*, SDom 421; for instances pure, with *por*, *pora* and *para*, see pp. 75, 209, 233, 235. For such cases it was customary to allow *por*, *pora* or *para* to take the infinitive because these at all times expressed *purpose*, whether depending on a single verb or a clause. This delicate fusion of *goal* and *purpose* in the *a*-infinitive with the verbs of motion listed below is to be felt rather than proved for individual instances.

As in other constructions where the pure and *a*-infinitives ran more or less parallel, the *a* appears in a proportionately greater number of cases with verbs of motion in the *Crónica* than in the poetry of the period, both because of the tendency of poetry to cling to traditional constructions and because of the lateness of the *Crónica* in the period concerned. For further discussion of the *a*-infinitive, see *yr* below.

**adelinar.**

adelinan a posar *Cid* 2857

**andar.**

In Old Spanish *andar* was very rare with infinitive, with or without preposition. The function of *yr* was very close to that of *andar*, and *yr* was the most frequent of all the verbs of motion. Later, the less general *andar* came more and more into popular favor. It is notable that the two cases cited below have *furtar* as the infinitive, thus indicating not a general application of *andar*, but a specific locution. *Por* and *en* are also found with the infinitive in *andar* locutions.

anda a furtar *Aliz* 766

anda a furtar *Cron* 401a38

**auenir.**

No other infinitive construction is noted with *auenir*. The simple verbs *venir*, *llegar*, etc. served ordinarily for such cases as this, but with reflexive form *pora*-infinitive is found.

eran auenidas las yentes a mandarse por ellos muy bien *Cron*  
70a17

**caualgar.**

The citation below shows *purpose* to predominate. *Pora*-infinitive occurs with *caualgar* similarly.

el rey caualgo con el a escorrirle fuera de la villa *Cron* 624a24

**derranchar (-car).**

derranchaua a cometer et a fazer mas que non solie *Cron* 743a6  
Fellon fue Nicolao, derranco a dezir . . . *Aliz* 133

**descender.**

The pure and *a*-infinitives were used with *descender*. *Purpose* is strongly felt in the citation below, though the dependence of the infinitive on *descender* is normal.

descendieron a poblar en los llanos *Cron* 493a22

**entrar.**

The pure and *a*-infinitives are noted with *entrar*. *Purpose* is to be felt in several of the passages cited herewith.

entraron a posar *Cid* 1877  
 antes que entrassen a yantar *Cid* 2250  
 entrol a demandar el rrey de su fazienda *Alix* 1860  
 Entro enna mañana ala mjssa dezir *SDom* 346  
 entosse a echar *Cron* 202a25  
 auie el a entrar a ueer al rey *Cron* 444a13  
 entra agora la estoria a contar . . . *Cron* 713b12

# **yr.**

This is the most generally utilized verb of motion in Old Spanish. Meyer-Lübke<sup>1</sup> tells us that with *venir* and *ir* started the general use of the pure infinitive with verbs of motion. Such a construction of the infinitive existed in Latin with *ire* and *venire*, and gradually supplanted the supine so used (e.g. *ad Caesarem gratulatum convenerunt*). The appearance of the preposition is of course considerably later than the pure infinitive, but having once started, it was not slow to usurp a major portion of the field with this class of verbs. At the period of the texts studied here, the territory was by no means largely occupied by either construction, but both were employed commonly, the pure infinitive losing, and the *a*-infinitive gaining, but both strong. Eleven intransitive verbs of motion appear with pure infinitive, eighteen with *a*-infinitive, and in general those taking the pure construction likewise take the *a*-form. So it is not hard to see the comparative favor in which the two constructions were held. It was inevitable that the *a*-infinitive should gain in ordinary use with verbs of motion, since motion was so intrinsic a part of the *a* function. No verb taking the infinitive illustrates so well as *yr* the various shades of *goal* and *purpose* that may be merged in the infinitive relation to the finite verb, as *yr* was used currently with the pure infinitive and with all the prepositions expressing *purpose* (*a*, *por*, *pora*, *para*): *la manol ban besar*, *Cid* 298; *donde iria a posar*, *SOria* 40; *Iuan los mandaderos por la paz asentar*, *Alix* 1079; *yuan ellos pora hablar con ell*, *Cron* 463a38; *el fuese . . . para meter rrecua a la frontera*, *Cron* 737b43.

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, § 503.

iranse a perder *Sig* 10  
 non iria afurtar *SDom* 427  
 e nos yr a lidiar *Aliz* 454  
 e yr los a feryr *Aliz* 585  
 de yr a cometer los *Aliz* 898  
 por nada tu non vayas con ellos a albergar *Aliz* 1670  
 van a cojer . . . las flores *Aliz* 1932  
 vas a rescebir grant gloria *Aliz* 2494  
 era ydo a casar a tierra de Bardulia *Cron* 359a10

A very interesting group of forms are those coming from the verb *ser*, found in Old Spanish in place of the etymologically correct forms from the perfect and allied tenses of *ire*. The same interchange of verbs meaning *to be* and *to go* is found in other languages, especially in the more popular strata of language (cf. the English vulgarism *I was to New York last week*). Unlike English, Spanish had the preposition *a* to express either *place where* or *to which* (English *at* and *to*), thus facilitating the confusion of the two constructions. The etymological forms from *ire*, especially in the singular, were phonologically weaker than those of *ser*, and this hastened the adoption of the *ser* forms. The intransitive sense of *yr* is maintained even when a reflexive pronoun is used to mark the spontaneity of an action:<sup>1</sup> *fuesse . . . a acorrerlos*, *Cron* 341b1.

fue a lidiar con el *Aliz* 157, 2198  
 alli se fue a coronar *Aliz* 182  
 fuelo a prender *Aliz* 524  
 fuel ya a dar pas *Aliz* 556  
 Fue a prender el canto Etor *Aliz* 571  
 fuelo a colpar *Aliz* 624  
 fuelo a feryr *Aliz* 626  
 fuelo a conjurar *Aliz* 1036  
 fuela a lidiar *Aliz* 1073  
 fue los a conbater *Aliz* 1102  
 fuelos a vesitar *Aliz* 1329  
 fuelo a ferir *Aliz* 2179  
 fuese a las espaldas del ad acostar *Aliz* 2210

<sup>1</sup> Menéndez Pidal: *Cid*, p. 341.

fuese . . . a folgar *Soria* 163  
 fueron se a esconder *Aliz* 603  
 . . . que fuesen a almorçar *Aliz* 1308  
 fueron se a colpar *Aliz* 1372  
 fueron se a esconder *Aliz* 2148  
 fuera a oyr missa *Cron* 349b13

Further examples of *yr* with *a*-infinitive are found in: *SDom* 359, 641; *Cron* 371b42, 414b4, 433a22, 439b25, 503b49, 504b43, 516b32, 518a32, 518b36, 521a50, 524b13, 580a47, 580b7.9, 583b29.

### issir.

This compound of *yr* somewhat more frequently takes the pure infinitive than that with *a*. The construction with *por* is also found.

Issió a reçibir las *Mil* 169

### llegar.

Only the *Crónica* offers examples of *llegar* with *a*-infinitive. A figurative sense such as is found in the French *arriver à* with infinitive is noted in the passages below. Other infinitive constructions of *llegar* have *por*, *pora* or no preposition, with or without clausal dependence.

llego la caualleria de Castiella a seer de quinientos fasta seyçien-  
 tos caualleros fijosdalgo *Cron* 429a31  
 llegaron . . . a auer treynta annos *Cron* 113b5  
 llego a seer emperador *Cron* 157b43  
 . . . por llegar a contar *Cron* 681b32

### mouer.

The intransitive use of *mouer* with *a*-infinitive is limited to one passage. The transitive and reflexive forms also take *a*. Infinitives pure and with *pora* are likewise noted with *mouer*.

de nuevo mouieron a lidiar *Aliz* 532

### pas(s)ar.

The pure and *pora*-infinitives are also noted with *passar*.

quisieron passar a uengarle *Cron* 16b38  
 passaran a conquerir a Francia *Cron* 64a25  
 passa a contar de la reyna *Cron* 715a28  
 pasa agora a contar de commo priso a Cordoua *Cron* 729a51

**puiar.**

The normal construction is with *a*-infinitive. *Por* also occurs.

puio este Sertorio a auer muchas yentes *Cron* 55b20  
 puio a seer omne de grand guisa *Cron* 82a45

**salir.**

This is one of the more current verbs of motion, taking the pure infinitive as well as that with *a*, *por* and *pora*. It occurs most commonly in the locution *salir a reęibir*, of which about thirty cases are found in these few texts. Without *reęibir*, *salir* is also noted not infrequently, but unquestionably this is its most favored locution. It may or may not take the preposition *a* with *reęibir*. The majority of the instances with *a* come from the *Crónica*.

Without *reęibir*:

Salleron a consellarse *Alix* 1592  
 ... que saliessen ellos otrossi a andar a cada parte *Cron*  
 438a35  
 salgamos a lidiar con ellos *Cron* 500a16  
 ... que saliessen todos a aguardar su senna *Cron* 506a15  
 querien salir a lidiar *Cron* 527b24

Also: *Cron* 25a1, 30a11, 32b2, 63b40, 317b37, 529b37, 530b8, 558b22; *Alix* 1591, 1622.

With *reęibir*:

a reęibirlos sali6 *Cid* 1917  
 sali6los a reęibir *Cid* 2882  
 a reęibirlos sale *Cid* 2886  
 sallola a rreęibir *Alix* 1859  
 saliolo a recebir *Cron* 141b27  
 salieron lo a recebir muy onradamiente *Cron* 170b27  
 saliol a recebir *Cron* 318a40  
 saliolos a recebir *Cron* 342b47

Also: *Cron* 359b24, 368b28, 375a36.38, 409b40, 418b7, 419b44, 437a34, 470b4, 522a1, 532a22, 535b45, 536b37, 541b14, 560a34, 580b25.35, 594b10, 595b23.37, 549b8.15.

**subir.**

The dependence of the infinitive on *subir* tends to be weak.

el primero que . . . subiesse a pesar del senado et de los otros  
 . . . a seer emperador *Cron* 162b38  
 subien a cometer los moros *Cron* 701b5

**tornar.**

This verb offers as great a variety of infinitive construction as any other verb of motion, being employed with *a*, *de*, *en*, *por*, *para*, *pora*, and without preposition. Menéndez Pidal states<sup>1</sup> that *tornar* in the *Cid* does not have the *iterative* sense which is frequent in the derivatives of *volvere* and *tornare* as cited by Diez.<sup>2</sup> Menéndez Pidal further considers that *tornar* might almost as well be omitted in so far as it affects the meaning of the verb used with it as infinitive. This would seem to me too hazardous a statement to make so definitely. That *tornar a* with infinitive departed from its strictly literal meaning, and that it became more or less of a formula with the author of the *Cid* cannot be denied. That it does not in the *Cid* have the *iterative* sense found in the same construction in various other authors need not be questioned either. But this hardly proves that nothing is added to the sense of the infinitive. It may well have been felt to intensify the sense of the infinitive and give a force to its action that could not have been gained by merely using the infinitive in a finite form. For instance, in the *Cid* 298, there seems to be present an *inceptive* force unobtainable by the substitution of *se sonrió* for *tornós a sonrisar*. However it may be in the *Cid*, where there is evident a greater weakening of sense than in the same locution used in other texts, in the *Crónica* and elsewhere can be noted two distinct senses, both to be expected from the original

<sup>1</sup> *Cid*, § 161, [2.

<sup>2</sup> *Gram.* III, p. 219, 6.



meaning of the verb *tornar*: *to turn to the doing*, and *to do again* (i.e. *to return to the doing*). It is the first of these two senses that allows itself to become weakened until Menéndez Pidal doubts its very existence. In the *Crónica* are found several clear cases of the *iterative* sense of *tornar a* with infinitive:

torno el pueblo a yudgarse por consules assi cuemo de primero  
Cron 7a41

Here the deciding phrase is *assi cuemo de primero*, indicating a return to a former condition. Other citations of the same nature are:

tornaremos a fablar de Hercules Cron 7a13 (Hercules has  
been mentioned a few lines before)

ouo quatrozientos e quaraenta e tres annos, fasta que torno  
a auer emperadores en Roma Cron 7a44

mas agora tornamos a fablar de Hercules Cron 9a53

començaron a dubdar . . . si ficarien et tornarien a lidiar  
Cron 72a22

mas acorrieronle luego sus uassallos, et dieronle un cauallo, et  
tornaron luego a ferrir muy de recio en los moros Cron 403a12  
conseiol . . . que tornasse a pensar en fecho de los caualleros  
Cron 550b42

torno commo de cabo a combater el arraual del Alcudia Cron  
571a15

guarescio daquela gordura, et torno a ser delgado como otro  
omne Cron 408b50

One interesting case of *tornar a* occurs in the *Crónica* 578b28, where *a* seems to express a *purpose* element closely bordering on the *iterative* sense illustrated above, yet being subtly distinct (*to return to take it*): *Capitulo de como los moros de Valencia se arrepintieron porque dexaran a Abenjaf su cabdiello, yl querien tornar a tomar*. There is clear *purpose* in Cron 342a39, due to dependence of the infinitive on the clause instead of on *tornar* itself: *se querie tornar pora su tierra a recibir el regno*.

In the citations following, there is no apparent *iteration* of sense. The *tornar a* has its primitive concept of *to turn to the doing*:

*agora dexa ell estoria de fablar desto, e torna a contar de cuemo el poder de los Romanos entro en Espanna.* This is followed by the chapter heading: *Aquí se comiença la estoria del sennorio que los Romanos ouieron en Espanna*, Cron 18b1, where the important word is *comiença*, indicating the broaching of a new subject. The same condition is found in Cron 20a35, where the actual description of the event follows the announcement of the subject: *torno a contar de cuemo los romanos enuiaron a Cipion el mancebo a Espanna*; Cron 665b46 is another good illustration of this principle: *ell rey don Sancho torno a preguntar al rey don Fernando . . . la razon de su uenida et a affincarle por cuiu consseio uiniera assi.* See also Cron 179a47, 180a50.

In the *Cid*, *tornar* occurs with *a*-infinitive as follows:

tornós a sonrisar *Cid* 298  
 él a las niñas tornólas a catar *Cid* 371  
 mio Çid con los sos tornós a acordar *Cid* 666  
 tornáronse a armar *Cid* 695  
 açerca de Murviedro tornan tiendas a fincar *Cid* 1101  
 alégraele el coraçón e tornós a sonrisar *Cid* 1266  
 tornós a alegrar *Cid* 1455

#### (h)uuiar.

The more frequent construction has the pure infinitive with (h)uuiar (see § 21).

antes que a la flota se uuiassen a coier *Cron* 21b5  
 nos uuiaran a guisar de caualleros *Cron* 29b5  
 ante que se huuiasen a coier *Cron* 753b27

#### venir (u-).

Next to *yr*, *venir* was the most influential verb of motion in early Romance.<sup>1</sup> What applies to the syntax of *yr* in general applies to that of *venir*, since they were of the same historical dignity, and represented converse views of the same action. Of the two *yr* was the more frequently used, and was found available for a variety of locutions that could not utilize *venir*.

<sup>1</sup> Meyer-Lübke: *Gram.* III, § 503.

Yet *venir* itself is currently met in all the texts of early Spanish, both with pure infinitive and with the various prepositions that regularly went with verbs of motion: *a*, *de*, *por* and *pora*. It is normal in its function of *goal* with the preposition *a*, though here, as in the case of *yr*, there is often some intermixture of the element of *purpose*. Most of the citations with *a* below are taken from the *Crónica*, but nearly all texts except the *Cid* are represented. This text by preference employs the pure infinitive. In the *Crónica* the locution most affected is *venir a acorrer* as in *el rey vernie a acorrerle*, Cron 584a22 (other examples in Cron 383b22, 400a36, 439b22, 472a22, 500a1).

viníamos a perdernos *Aliz* 872

lo vino a veer *Duelo* 69

a rogarvos venia *Mil* 170

Vinienlo a veer *Mil* 215

Vino el pueblo todo a la missa oir,

Prender pan beneito, el agua reçebir *Mil* 832

vinjeron a furtarlos *SDom* 377

ouieron a uenir a guerrear unos con otros *Cron* 31b20

Also: *Sig* 61; *Mil* 909; *Loor* 31, 44; *SDom* 331, 346; *Cron* 371b37, 434b21, 440a1, 450a38, 463a25, 467b19, 472a22, 493a7, 525b39, 537b22, 551a31, 581a12, 584b24.

#### THE A-INFINITIVE INDICATES GOAL WITH REFLEXIVE VERBS

43. The class of reflexives taking the *a*-infinitive is even larger than the last class discussed, that of the intransitive verbs. That this is true does not cause surprise when it is remembered that the group is composed of members of other groups not fundamentally reflexives, such as the transitive and intransitive verbs used for convenience with the reflexive pronouns (*acordarse*, *tornarse*, *mouerse*, etc.). This is particularly true of the transitives, since any transitive can take a reflexive pronoun, subject only to the limitations of its sense.

Notable among transitive verbs that have a well recognized standing as reflexives are *dar*, *echar*, *meter*, *tomar*, etc. A verb may appear in all three classes with the preposition *a* (e.g. *mouer* and *tornar*), viz., as a transitive, intransitive, and reflexive.

The normal function of *a* is evidently to indicate the goal of the action: *acogense a andar*, Cid 2690; *dar se ya a morir*, Cron 91b34; *echos a dormir*, Cron 38b11; *Mouieronse a andar*, Alix 1712. Yet the connection between the verb and the preposition may be less close than in the above cases and may indicate a considerable degree of *purpose*, as was pointed out for several verbs of the last group (*a penas se pudieron leuantar a recibirle*, Cron 665b24). In others, the relation approaches that of verb object (*non se atreuie a yr*, Cron 20b43; *se acordarian a darle la uilla*, Cron 749a18).

The verbs most typical of this group (i.e. those not taking any other than this *a*-infinitive of goal) are: *acogerse*, *apresurarse*, *cogerse*, *darse*, *echarse*, *meterse* (for examples see the individual verbs below).

#### **acojerse.**

*acójense a andar* Cid 2690

#### **acordarse.**

The infinitive also has *de*, *por* and *en* with *acordarse*.

*se acordarian a darle la uilla* Cron 749a18

#### **apartarse.**

*Para*-infinitive is likewise noted with *apartarse*.

*se aparto yent a llamar un Dios et a circumcidar se* Cron 109a22

*yo non me aparto con mugeres nin a cantar nin a beuer* Cron 589a22

#### **apresurarse.**

. . . *que se apresurasse a uenir* Cron 566a7

*apresurosse a uenir* Cron 566a11

**assentarse.**

*Yantar* may have substantival force in the examples below (cf. English *sit down to dinner* and *sit down to dine*, *yantar* representing both *dinner* and *dine*; *a* indicates *goal* most clearly with the substantival *yantar*).

assentando se los omnes a yantar Cron 55a15

el rey se assento a yantar Cron 349b20

desque se assento a yantar Cron 694a31

**atreuerse.**

The preposition *a* here introduces practically a verb object. The infinitive may also be used with *de* and *en*, or remain pure. Of these constructions, the prepositional types are most frequent. Again all instances come from the *Crónica*.

nos atrouieron a poblar Cron 14a37

. . . ques atrouieron a lidiar Cron 19a24

non se atreuie a uenir Cron 20b40

non se atreuie a yr Cron 20b43

non se atreuieron a dezir que . . . Cron 233b20

non auie y omne que se atrouiesse a amparar et defender Cron 315a6

se atrouieran a uenirla guerrear Cron 363a2

non me atreuio a lidiar nin a defenderme Cron 411a3

non nos atreuemos a fazer ninguna cosa sin el Cron 414b46

Also: Cron 292b20, 541b25, 652a48, 666b51, 674b36, 732a38, 750a3, 755a35, 765a28.

**ayuntarse.**

The *a*-infinitive here rather expresses the *purpose* than the *goal* of the action. This verb appeared currently as a transitive, and took the infinitive with *por* and *pora* as well as *a*.

. . . que se ayuntassen a defender la fe Cron 449a46

**cogerse.**

As with *tomarse* and *acojerse*, *a* clearly indicates the *goal* of the action.

cogios a uenir Cron 83b14

cogiosse a foyr Cron 702a44

**cuytarse.**

se cuytaran a salir *Cron* 758b30

**darse.**

The only infinitive construction of *darse* has *a*. This is quite natural in view of the fact that *dar* as a transitive verb might normally take an indirect object, and that *a* was used to indicate this object (cf. *se dio alli a malas costumbres, et a yr por su talante*, *Cron* 169a41). *Dar* likewise implies motion, so that *a* would be normal with dependent infinitive. The locution *darse a guarir* is noteworthy, with *guarir* sometimes marked as a substantive: *dieron se a guarir*, *Alix* 734 and 1057; *dieron-se al guarir*, *Alix* 1719, and *Date al guarir luego*, *Sac* 724. The majority of the instances of *darse* with dependent infinitive are found in the *Crónica*.

dieron se a correr *Alix* 1728

dar se ya a morir *Cron* 91b34

se daua a entender *Cron* 236b23

dieronse a folgar *Cron* 256a13

dieron se ellos a foyr *Cron* 310a16

Also: *Cron* 324a36, 342a4, 404a37, 421a37, 670a29.

**echarse.**

This verb shows marked similarity to *darse*, etc. The preposition *a* regularly indicates the *goal* of the action. Three instances appear in the *Alixandre*, the rest in the *Crónica*. The only current locution is *echarse a dormir*, found rather often. As with *darse*, no other infinitive construction is noted with *echarse*.

El pecado que nunca se echo a dormir *Alix* 1879

echos a dormir *Cron* 38b11

Also: *Cron* 127b51, 128a44, 184a48.

echosse a obrar *Cron* 658b32

In two passages the infinitive has the same relation to the verb as the substantives used under the same circumstances and at the same time (see discussion under *darse* above):

se echauan a nobleza et a mas ualer *Cron* 156b40  
 echo se a vicio et a folgar et a usar de todas malas costumbres  
*Cron* 168a12

### **esforçarse.**

*De-* and *pora-*infinitives are also noted with *esforçarse*.

esforçosse a fazelles quanto mal pudo *Cron* 30a37

### **leuantarse.**

The *a*-infinitive indicates both *goal* and *purpose* in the instances below. *De*, *por* and *pora* with the infinitive, as well as the pure construction, are also found with *leuantarse*.

se començaua a leuantar a seer por si ell regno de Portugal  
*Cron* 650a34

a penas se pudieron leuantar a reçibirle *Cron* 665b24

### **meterse.**

The similarity in sense and syntax of *meterse* and *tomarse* is to be noted. Menéndez Pidal gives the modern equivalent as *ponerse*, also with *a*-infinitive.<sup>1</sup> Only two instances of *meterse* with *a*-infinitive appear in the poetry, all the rest in the *Crónica*.

métense a andar *Cid* 2878

al ferir se metieron *SMill* 442 (with substantive-infinitive)

se metie . . . a amparar el so fecho *Cron* 20b19

metios . . . a entrar por medio dell agua *Cron* 71b54

metieron se a andar *Cron* 72b11

metieron se a destroyr toda tierra de Ytalia *Cron* 168a21

se metieron a robar *Cron* 290a39

metiose el rey . . . a fazer obras de misericordia *Cron* 406a41

Also: *Cron* 451a19, 475b15, 522a13, 673b1.

### **mouerse.**

The transitive and intransitive, as well as reflexive, forms of *mouer* are used. *Pora*-infinitive is also found with the reflexive; the other constructions with *a*, *pora* and pure.

Mouieronse a andar *Aliz* 1712

adubdar non te mueuas *SDom* 713

non se mouer a ferir *Cron* 75b9

<sup>1</sup> *Cid*, § 161, [3.

**pararse.**

*Pora*-infinitive also occurs with *pararse*.

*parosse a almorzar Cron 115b6*

**tomarse.**

The *Cid* and the *Crónica* share equally the examples of *tomarse*. Menéndez Pidal<sup>1</sup> gives the locution an *inceptive* sense along with *pensar de*, *conpeçar de*, etc. He observes that the *romances* usually prefer the synonym of *tomarse*, i.e. *prenderse*, unknown in the *Cid*. In one instance he finds no inceptive sense, *Cid* 1102: *tomós a maravillar*. However, in the vast majority of passages this inceptive sense is clearly felt. No other infinitive construction is available with *tomarse*.

*moros e moras tomáronse a quexar Cid 852*

*Viólo mio Çid, tomós a maravillar Cid 1102*

*tómanse a deportar Cid 1514*

*tómanse a preguntar Cid 1825*

*tomaron se a reir del Cron 32b15*

*tomaron se a robar et a despechar los cibdadanos Cron 284b17*

*tomose entonces a sonrrisar Cron 374b7*

*tomaronse a riir Cron 432a5*

**tornarse.**

For discussion of the intransitive construction of *tornar* with infinitive, see § 42. Examples of the reflexive construction illustrate both senses of *tornar* (*to turn, to return, to doing something*). The *iterative* sense of *tornar* is evidenced in the following instances: *tornosse a fazer cuemo primero todo lo peor*, *Cron 124b16*; . . . *se tornasse a uiuir uida de omne simple*, *Cron 183b16*; *tornaron se de cabo a auer sos consules cuemo los ouieran antes*, *Cron 86b29*. Elsewhere the normal sense of *to turn, to set oneself, to doing* makes the locution resemble *tomarse*, *meterse*, etc. above. The *de*-, *para*- and *pora*-infinitives are also used with *tornarse*, and, with the intransitive *tornar*, *de*, *en*, *pora*, as well as the construction without preposition.

<sup>1</sup> *Cid*, § 161, [3.



tornós a sonrisar *Cid* 298, 1266  
 torno se . . . a correr las prouincias *Cron* 167b47  
 tornauanse a comer las yeruas *Cron* 583b36  
 tornosse a guerrear *Cron* 581a38; also *Aliz* 2361

### **treuerse.**

Like *atreuerse* above, *treuerse* takes *a* to introduce practically an infinitive object. The pure infinitive is regular with *treuerse*.

non me trevria en ello a venir *Mil* 45  
 non se treue a firmar lo que . . . *Cron* 491b25

### **vezarse.**

The pure infinitive is also used with *vezarse*.

Los omnes que se vezan tal vida a mantener *Aliz* 2361

## THE A-INFINITIVE WITH TRANSITIVE VERBS

44. The group of transitive verbs taking *a* with the infinitive is smaller and, on the whole, less representative than the groups recently discussed (e.g. the intransitive verbs of motion and the reflexives). There are only three verbs of this class frequently met in the texts under consideration: *ayudar*, *dar* and *enbiar*. The prevailing function of the preposition *a* is to indicate the *goal* of the action (*to, toward*): *ayudauan le a mantener el regno*, *Cron* 16b43; *los tornara a obedecer el senorio de Roma*, *Cron* 158b17. Occasionally, as in the last few sections, a passage will emphasize the *purpose* element of the preposition: *pidio abeuer*, *SDom* 306; *diogelo abeuer*, *SDom* 307. *Mouer* and *tornar* are found among these transitives, although they are more regularly used as intransitive verbs of motion. *Dar* offers a number of delicate problems discussed below.

### **aduxir.**

This verb illustrates the normal use of the *a*-infinitive to indicate the *goal* of the action.

los aduxieron a seer pocos *Cron* 4b1  
 . . . fasta quem aduxo a casar con estotro *Cron* 42a16

**ayudar.**

This is one of the most frequent verbs of the transitive group taking *a*-infinitive, the preposition regularly indicating the *goal* of the action with *ayudar*. The pure infinitive and that with *pora* also appear in the *ayudar* locution, though more rarely: *Se Dios me aiudase la uoluntad complir*, Sac 145. The *Crónica* yields all except three of the numerous examples cited below.

ruego . . . que me ayude a rogar *Cid* 363

tu nos ayuda las almas asalar *SDom* 766

ayudol el diablo aprender la soldada *Sac* 210

. . . que los ayudassen a librar daquela coyta *Cron* 15b53

ayudauan le a mantener el regno *Cron* 16b43

. . . quel ayudassen a deffender Roma *Cron* 20b8

. . . quel ayudassen a cercar la uilla *Cron* 35b43

. . . por tal que ge lo ayude a auer *Cron* 299a20

. . . que gelo ayudassen a mantener *Cron* 324b28

ayudol ella misma a armar *Cron* 341a45

Also: *Cron* 345a7, 346b48, 379b19, 429b27, 445b4, 518a25, 547b17, 547b40, 548a22, 548a24, 555b12, 559a21, 561a21, 561a48, 572b20, etc.

**dar.**

Concerning *dar* with *a*-infinitive Menéndez Pidal states:<sup>1</sup> "La preposición *a* otras veces sirve para marcar el fin: *Dio a partir estos dineros*, *Cid* 804." This is found to be relatively true of all the other instances of *dar a* with infinitive. The statement of Diez<sup>2</sup> is not at all contradictory to this when he says that *dar* with infinitive may be equivalent to *lasciare* (hence *dexar* in Old Spanish), in the sense of *permitting*. This is stated for the pure infinitive by Diez. Only one example of this principle is found in our texts: *Porque daban al pueblo beber de buen castigo*, *Soria* 60. In this passage *beber* is an active infinitive object of *daban*, not a noun as *beber* often is; thus the idea of *permitting* or *causing* can be felt in *daban* rather than its literal sense of *giving*. The poet uses both the pure and *a*-infinitives with equivalent sense in: *Tu me da bien empezar*,

<sup>1</sup> *Cid*, § 161, [3.

<sup>2</sup> *Gram.* III, p. 208.

*tu me da bien a complir*, Loor 3. The introduction of *a* before the infinitive gives a sense of *goal* to the action that does not conspicuously interfere with this idea of *permitting* or *causing*: *entre tales omnes me dieron a beuir*, Alix 926; *bien a beber me diestes*, Sig 28; *me das a veyer tamaña alegría*, Alix 945; *tan grandes quebrantos nos dieron a veyer*, Alix 1422; *Ruega . . . que nos de en cabo a ueer la su faz*, SDom 772. The *goal* of *a* merges into a more definite *purpose* in *diogelo a beuer*, SDom 307; *sy non ouieral dado venino a beuer*, Alix 627; *dyol mucho a ganar*, Alix 981; *dieron la a criar a un hermano*, Cron 33a36; *yl dan alguna animalia a matar*, Cron 74b1. The passive sense seems to make itself felt in the infinitive from time to time, though in most cases the sense is satisfied by either the active or passive rendering, as was generally true of *fazer* and infinitive. It is quite natural, however, to feel a passive sense in such instances as *lo dió a criar*, Mil 579; *yl dan alguna animalia a matar*, Cron 74b1. In passages having *heber* it is sometimes easy to read a noun value into the infinitive, though not when *a* is used. It is clearly a noun in *Diol beber tan amargo que peor non podria*, since it is modified by an adjective. In *diogelo abeuer*, SDom 307, it is clearly a verb as well as in *bien a beber me diestes*, Sig 28, and *venino a beuer*, Alix 627. The *de*-infinitive is also used with *dar*: *dauan de comer*, Cron 523b25 (for other verbs taking *de*- and *a*-infinitives with quite similar sense, see *auer*, *ser* and *tener*, § 45).

dieronte a matar a los tus amigos Alix 1630

yo a ti lo diera todo a ordenar Alix 1759

diol a criar al rey Cron 7b45

dieron la a criar a un hermano Cron 33a36

non querie dar esto a entender Cron 53a45

yl dan alguna animalia a matar Cron 74b1

Also: Alix 1630, 1759; Cid 3381; Cron 706a15.

### **endereçar.**

*Por*- and *pora*-infinitives also occur with *endereçar*.

endereçarie al malo a fazer bien Cron 85b4

**enbiar (enu-).**

The infinitive with *por* and *pora*, as well as without preposition, is also noted with *enbiar*. The function of the preposition is clearly that of *goal* (*quando alguno enuiavan a conquistar tierra*, Cron 24b1), becoming *purpose* when *enbiar* has an indirect object which assumes to itself the *goal* element naturally associated with *enbiar* (*enuiaron . . . los mandaderos al rey . . . a dezirle que . . .*, Cron 391a9). As has been most often found with verbs taking the *a*-infinitive, a majority of the available instances come from the late prose-text, the *Crónica*. *Enbiar* and its infinitive may each have direct and indirect objects, and the position of these objects is not fixed, so that the context often has to be resorted to in order to determine with which verb a given object functions: *a rogar uos enbian*, SDom 278; *enbiol a dezir . . .*, Alix 1571. *Enbiar a dezir* is the most frequent *enbiar* locution and *dezir* usually takes the indirect object despite its occasional position with *enbiar* (*enbioles a dezir en paz e en amor que catasen a el por su enperador*, Alix 1112).

enbio a amatarla ante que fues ardida Alix 860

enbio a la madre de Dario a rogar que . . . Alix 1568

. . . que enuiasse a aquel mismo Carthon a poblar aquel logar  
Cron 37a2

enuio luego un so hermano . . . a correr la tierra Cron 364b52

enuio a don Velasco . . . a firmar las pazes Cron 422b36

enuiaron los alaraues . . . a rogar et dezir a Mahomat Almahadi por sus mandaderos Cron 457a6

enuio luego sus mandados . . . a dezirles que . . . Cron 418b2

Also: Cron 396b17, 417a20, 527a28, 540b42, 562a30.

**leuar.**

With this verb of motion, *a* with the infinitive naturally indicates the *goal* of the action, yet in actual instances it expresses rather more of *purpose*. The dependent infinitive is susceptible of the passive sense mentioned for such phrases as *dar a entender* (see *dar* above). All citations come from the prose *Crónica*. The only notable locution is *leuar a enterrar*.

leuaronle a enterrar *Cron* 449b21, 714b39, 453b15

leuauanlo todo a vender *Cron* 569a15

le leuauan a abeurar *Cron* 641a46

### **meter.**

The only locution to be specially noted for this verb is *meter a leer*, in which *poner* may replace *meter* (*Mahomet fue puesto a leer*, *Cron* 263a26). *Meter* also takes the infinitive with *en* and *por*.

El padre de siete años metiole a leer *Aliz* 16

metieron lo a leer *Cron* 164a41

metiolos a cometer fuertes fechos *Cron* 229a9

metamos mano a destroyr los gascones *Cron* 286a24

metiolos luego a leer *Cron* 483b31

### **mostrar.**

As a transitive, *mostrar* is practically equivalent to *ensennar*. It also takes the pure infinitive. The personal object of *mostrar* is noted as direct.

et de las mostrar a ferir de segures et . . . a tirar dardos *Cron* 126a52

mostrolos a lidiar et a combatersse et a ser caçadores *Cron* 483b33

### **mouer (-v-).**

Besides its transitive use, *mouer* appears as intransitive and as reflexive, all three constructions taking *a*-infinitive to indicate the *goal* of the action.

Puedes mover a omne a fer desaguisado *SLaur* 39

le mouieron ya descubiertamientra a cometer esta batalla *Cron* 67a19

### **pedir.**

As with *dar* above, the *a*-infinitive with *pedir* expresses *purpose*.

pidio abeuer *SDom* 306

### **poner.**

This is an excellent illustration of the *a*-infinitive expressing *goal*. *En*-infinitive is also noted with *poner*. *Meter* is used

as well as *poner* in the locution *poner a leer*, cited below (*metieron lo a leer*, Cron 164a41).

Mahomat fue puesto a leer Cron 263a26

**tornar.**

This verb is much more frequent as an intransitive verb of motion, and as a reflexive. No other infinitive constructions are noted with the transitive use of the verb.

los tornara a obedecer el sennorio de Roma Cron 158b17

### THE A-INFINITIVE WITH AUER AND SER

**auer.**

45. One of the most complicated single constructions to be studied under the preposition *a* is *auer* with *a*-infinitive, so common in the early language of Spain. At first it seems quite simple, but on further study it reveals a number of very interesting problems. It has already been noted that the relation existing between *auer* with the pure infinitive and *auer* with *a* and *de* is extremely close. Most students of Romance syntax give approximately the same sense to the two prepositional constructions, but keep the pure infinitive apart by itself. The problem is, however, more subtle than that. The ordinary function of the pure infinitive with *auer* is the expression of simple *futurity*, a construction generally adopted in the Romance languages. The association between the preceding infinitive and the conjugated form of *auer* is so close that the two component parts are felt to form a unit, and in the course of time become thought of and written as one word. The relation of the infinitive to the verb is of course that of object. Diez states<sup>1</sup> that the Latin *habeo dicere* expressed only *possibility*, not *necessity*. In Vulgar Latin times he finds that both the Latin sense of *possibility* and the Romance sense of *necessity* are to be noted in the *habere* locution. When the Romance languages were in their early stages of development, yet might

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, p. 217.

reasonably be called the Romance languages, the sense of *possibility*, which becomes the regular future and conditional, and that of *necessity*, which is preserved in the prepositional constructions, were struggling for the supremacy. Although with the earliest Spanish documents the two senses were becoming fixed in what was to be their permanent form (*futurity* in the pure infinitive construction, and *necessity* in that with *a* and *de*) the changing conditions can be easily perceived and studied. For one thing, the two verbs going to make up this practical future and conditional could be separated by a personal pronoun. This is quite current in the early texts, occurring over fifty times in the *Cid*, and commonly in other works (*ir lo hemos buscar*, *Cid* 1438; *fer lo he de voluntad*, *Cid* 1447; *Semeiar mie, señores, si a todos vos plaz* . . . *Sac* 157).

Menéndez Pidal<sup>1</sup> discusses these constructions thus: "Muchas veces, al lado de la preposición *de*, se emplea también *a* indistintamente. Tal es el caso con los auxiliares que rigen infinitivo para formar una expresión perifrástica de la voz activa con diversos matices de significación:—*auer* expresa la necesidad, rigiendo al infinitivo ora con *de* . . . ora con *a*. La preposición falta rara vez, acaso sólo en: *los que han lidiar*, *Cid* 3523 . . . El pretérito, rigiendo á un infinitivo con *de* o *a*, expresa no la necesidad, sino un acaecimiento subsiguiente ó futuro respecto al tiempo pretérito de una narración." These statements, though in general true, will permit some slight modification. First, there is no reference here to the exact function of the preposition. Secondly, the statement that the preterit does not on occasion express *necessity* can with difficulty be proved. The prepositional function that needs mention here, and that serves to clarify to a considerable extent the locution discussed, is that one already so often found in the preposition *a*, *goal*. This was pointed out by Meyer-Lübke, who considers *habere ad* to date back to a period before Romance, and *goal* to be the concept inherent in it. The situation can be better visualized from the English locutions

<sup>1</sup> *Cid*, § 161, [2.

*I have it to do*, and *I have to do it*. In the first phrase, the concept of *goal* can be clearly felt while that of *necessity* is undeveloped though present, but in the second phrase the element of *necessity* springs to view full-grown. In Old Spanish decided evidences of this original concept of *goal* are to be noted, and numerous delicate shades intermediate between the two extremes of *goal* and *necessity*. Similarity of form does not indicate similarity of sense in these instances of *auer* with the infinitive. The citations below are admittedly debatable, but give clear enough indications of the *goal* element in *auer* with *a*-infinitive verging upon simple *futurity*, and not *necessity*. It will be remarked that no instance of the preterit (*ouo*) is included here, this tense of *auer* with prepositional infinitive alone being excepted by Menéndez Pidal from the expression of *necessity*.

Fijo, sy de buena ventura *as a seyer*,  
o sy en este siglo algo *as a valer*,  
en muchas grandes cueytas te avras a veyer Alix 64

Entiende, Alixandre, que te quiero hablar,  
sal de Herupa, ve a vltra mar,  
avras todos los rregnos del mundo a ganar Alix 1137

El omne que non ha de cueyta a sallir,  
quanto mas pudiese se deuie encobrir,  
al omne que non veen non saben escarnir Alix 1602

sy tu a el tornases el te sabrie honrrar,  
cayste en desyerto en auieso lugar,  
ouieronte las bestias todas a devorar Alix 1761

quanto gana omne ha lo todo a dexar,  
hanlo sus enemigos mortales a lograr Alix 1787

(In this instance, *ha . . . a dexar* largely expresses necessity, *han . . . a lograr* goal, as can be felt in the English *he has to leave it all* and *they have it to gain*.)

The following examples are given of the preterit having *necessity* implied in them. Menéndez Pidal considers the pret-



erit *ouo* to express only *un acaecimiento subsiguiente ó futuro respecto al tiempo preterito de una narración*, and cites *Aliz* 2082 with no special comment on its element of *necessity*.

Pero tanto ovieron contender e buscar,  
Fasta que lo ovieron en cabo a fallar.

It would seem to me that the first line, which is the one in question, contains the element of *necessity* quite clearly, while the second, unmentioned, evidences little if any *necessity*. The lack of a preposition in the first line has no visible effect on the sense; nor is any reason given for functionally distinguishing *ouieron* from its singular *ouo*.

In the *Cid* 1145 occurs a clear instance of *necessity* in the preterit (Menéndez Pidal cites this case and 953 both under *auer* expressing *necessity* and along with the preterit *ouo* (see above):

Del otra part entróles Álbar Fáñez,  
Maguer les pesa, ovieronse a dar e a arrancar *Cid* 1145

Other illustrations of *necessity* with *ouo* or *ouieron*:

ouieron a tollerse del portillo syn grado *Aliz* 214

ouieron los griegos las rriendas a boluer *Aliz* 498

ouieronle syn grado el canpo a dexar *Aliz* 645

conterta como a Lucifer que tanto quiso subyr,  
desenparolo Dios et ovo a perir *Aliz* 781

Ovose de las cuevas por esso arrancar,  
Ca non querie al so grado el voto quebrantar *SMill* 46

The above discussion and examples, intended to show that the preterit of the *auer* locution (*ouo* and *ouieron*) could carry the sense of *necessity*, does not try to disprove Menéndez Pidal's main point. The preterit usually does act as he so clearly states, and it is only in sporadic passages that the element of *necessity* can be proved. In numerous cases, however, it is apparently a fusion of *necessity* and *futurity* rather than either sense alone that is implied. The following are cited from the *Cid* by Menéndez Pidal in this connection:

- ouieron te a laudare *Cid* 335  
 ovieron a morar *Cid* 953 (see p. 182 above)  
 ovieronse a dar e a arrancar *Cid* 1145 (see p. 182 above)  
 ovieron a enbiar *Cid* 1181  
 ovierongela a dar *Cid* 1210

Other instances of the preterit of the *auer* locution with various shades of *futurity* and *necessity* follow:

- ouo a vencerlos *Aliz* 151  
 ouos de la reyna fuerte a enamorar *Aliz* 154  
 ouo lo a pedir *Aliz* 165  
 ouolo a vençer *Aliz* 166  
 ouolo a prender *Aliz* 166  
 ouo el arbol a fallar *Aliz* 311  
 ouole el padre el nonbre a mudar *Aliz* 344  
 oue ant ty a uenir *Aliz* 349  
 ovo a la rreyna el su prez a plegar *Aliz* 381  
 Ovolo en grant priuança el rrey a acojer *Aliz* 382  
 ouo todos los pleitos la dueña a saber *Aliz* 382  
 ouo el rrey a yr *Aliz* 383  
 ouo a bollyr *Aliz* 383  
 ouieron a veyer *Aliz* 389  
 ouolos a entranbos a degollar a dientes *Aliz* 391

This is an appropriate place to consider the matter of possible absorption of *a* in the *auer* locution, which might affect a number of our citations. By absorption of *a* is meant here the disappearance of the preposition *a* before or after a juxtaposed *a*. Absorption of vowels doubtless operated in Old Spanish, as proved by Menéndez Pidal for the *Cid*, and as clearly shown by Professor Fitzgerald for the *Santo Domingo de Silos*. Professor Fitzgerald offers excellent material for discussion of the phase of the subject interesting the *auer* locution, since he finds a number of examples of possible absorption of the preposition *a*, and, if the principle is proved for the cases he cites, it might equally well apply here.

The first passage, cited by Professor Fitzgerald as showing absorption of *a* is:

El padre cordojoso entro asu altar,  
como era usado, al Criador rogar,

in which *al* is of course the absorbing word. But if the principle is accepted in this instance, it would normally be accepted in three others:

entro el ala iglesia, al criador rogar *SDom* 300

entro a la iglesia rogar al Criador *SDom* 409

Entro ala iglesia al Criador rogar *SDom* 425

In the poem from which all these four doubtful cases come there is only one passage in which the preposition *a* is clearly used with *entrar*, and that is:

Entro enna mañana ala mjssa dezir *SDom* 346

Against four cases that might be considered as instances of pure infinitive with verbs of motion, one of the most frequent and unquestionable infinitive constructions of the early language, there is only one passage in this or in the other poems by Berceo to indicate his preference for the *a*-infinitive with *entrar*. On the other hand, he wittingly employs the pure infinitive in four cases, where there is no possible reason for supposing it absorbed:

Entró el sacristano el sepulcro catar *SMil* 335

Por entrar a la missa la confession fazer *Mil* 71

Entró fer oraçion el novio refrescado *Mil* 338

. . . Que pueda entrar entro veer la magestad *Mil* 768

Judging, then, from Berceo's own treatment of the *entrar* locutions, it must be said that there is much more evidence against absorption in these cases than for it. Why, indeed, is it necessary to suppose that this principle operated in these doubtful instances of the *entrar* locution? I do not see that it is necessary, since the pure infinitive answers all needs of the passages, and is sanctioned by the author as sufficient. The fact that it is poetry that is being discussed also has some bearing on the matter, since the *a*-infinitive was used more rarely in the poetry than in the prose of this period. This is seen to be true by comparing the citations from prose and poetry under any

of the verbs of motion of this chapter. It will be found that *a* was customary in prose texts such as the *Crónica* for the greater number of these verbs, but was often peculiarly rare in the poetry of the same general period. It was probably a matter of temporary convenience that decided whether or not Berceo employed *a* in these instances.

Two more passages are cited to show absorption of *a*:

començo muy afirmes al Criador rogar *SDom* 450

ante començo el la açada buscar *SDom* 726

Here Professor Fitzgerald takes *al* and *açada* as the absorbing words. He states that *a* or *de* was nearly always required with *començar* and infinitive, and that Cuervo only gives one instance of the omission of the preposition with *començar*. But, as also remarked by the editor, it is significant that at least one passage in this same poem has no *a* with the infinitive, and permits no explanation of such omission through absorption: *començaron los monges las canpañas tañer*, *SDom* 568. If Berceo omits the preposition here, it is reasonable to suppose he may omit it elsewhere if evidence shows that such treatment was by no means rare in this period. Nine examples of the pure infinitive with *començar* are available from the few texts herein studied, none of them permitting absorption to be considered as the cause of the absence of *a*:

començo darle guerra *Aliz* 402

Començol mal traher con palabras yradas *Aliz* 451

Començol dar priesa *Aliz* 685

començaron guerrear luego *Cron* 219a6

Also: *Cron* 605a46, 653b19, 684b32, 741a50.

There are enough examples of the pure infinitive with *començar*, then, to seem to indicate that the two cases in question would be by no means irregular, if considered as instances of the pure infinitive object with *començar*, no question being raised as to the possible disappearance of the preposition.

Professor Fitzgerald further states: "One might be tempted to count as another case of *a* *embedida* after *fue* the verse *fue*

*caer al sepulcro del confessor honrrado*, SDom 669." In such a case it seems to me that there can be no valid reason for considering the possibility of absorption, since, in the first place, in the *Santo Domingo* itself there are eleven cases of *yr* with pure infinitive against five with *a*-infinitive. The pure infinitive with *yr* was, indeed, more regular in the poetry of the period than was the prepositional infinitive (the *Alixandre* yields about twice as many instances of the construction without preposition as it does with *a*, i. e. 56 and 29 respectively). There is of course the further fact that absorption of *a* by the *e* of *fue* would be quite abnormal. But it should be added, in justice to Professor Fitzgerald, that he suggests rather than affirms absorption of *a* to be operative in this verse, and states himself that *yr* does not require the preposition.

The conclusion that I wish to emphasize is that, whereas absorption did doubtless operate in certain instances and in certain conditions, it must not be assumed, just because there is an *a* in juxtaposition, as operative with the preposition *a* in those instances where the pure infinitive is used. The pure infinitive should be considered regular and normal until the evidence is conclusive in favor of voluntary omission of the preposition.

The application of the above discussion on the immediate problem of *auer* with the *a*-infinitive is obvious. The preposition is lacking in a fair number of instances of this locution, and, where possible, the temptation would be felt to consider absorption as responsible, but in view of the evidence given above, absorption will not be postulated as operative in these passages. They will then, until further evidence is at hand, be classed as instances of the pure infinitive construction.

A few facts should be mentioned concerning the doubtful cases of this *auer* locution, however. In Berceo's own works the pure infinitive is found in seven passages. In only one of these is there a neighboring *a*:

Por que en tal periglo nos aves a uviar  
 Por el tu guyonage avemos arrivar,  
 Et de aquellas ondas tan fuertes escapar    *Loor* 197

The sense does not require a separate preposition here. It is of course possible to explain the form *arriuar* as the scribe's writing for *a rivar*, or as a real instance of the absorption of *a*. However, the most natural assumption is that it is the regular pure infinitive object with *auer*, and that any ingenious explanation is unnecessary, since the use or omission of the preposition would not alter the sense of the passage. In the *Alixandre*, there are over three hundred cases of *a* with *auer* against a negligible number in which there is any possibility of absorption. Of these few, one has the neighboring *a* in another hemistich, a fact which would naturally militate against its being explained by this principle. On the other hand, there are over thirty cases where the preposition *a* is permitted by the poet to stand in hiatus with another *a*. It would appear, then, that when he employed the pure infinitive, he did so voluntarily, and not because it was objectionable to have the preposition stand in juxtaposition with another *a*. As this was the same ancient construction that had developed, in different order and with different sense, into the Romance future, the poet might occasionally use it, and consider that tradition consecrated its employment, especially as the prepositional construction was a recent development of the language.

Instances of juxtaposed *a*:<sup>1</sup>

Los que . . . han alimosna pedir *Alix* 1596

Avremos . . . la cosa destajar *Alix* 2045

ouieron atender e buscar *Alix* 2224

Instances of permitted hiatus with the vowel *a*:

ovo envidia a naçer *Mil* 100

Ovo la mezquiniella a plegar al forado *Mil* 146

Ovieron con sue cuita a romper el silencio *Mil* 208

<sup>1</sup> The context will usually indicate whether the initial *a* of an infinitive is separable, or necessary to the sense of the infinitive (*ouieron se aguardar*, *Alix* 2162; *ouieron aplegar*, *Alix* 1276). It seems probable that the actual use of the preposition *a* in the infinitive would satisfy any possible feeling of need for *a* much more thoroughly than an unrelated final *a* in a preceding noun (see *Alix* 2045 and p. 25 above).

Ovieronse en cueta a veer *SMil* 478  
 avie sines dubda a seer martiriado *Laur* 27  
 avia adezirgelo *SDom* 37  
 ouo la uieia a morir *SDom* 112  
 Ovola a sacar *SDom* 416  
 Ovo . . . el burgés a asmar *Mil* 635  
 Abran con el diablo siempre a aturar *Loor* 182  
 Ovolo . . . el rrey a acojer *Aliz* 382  
 ouo Vlixes a andar *Aliz* 731  
 ouieron los de Tiro trayçion a asmar *Aliz* 1079  
 ouo mucho a acostar *Aliz* 1361  
 merçet nos avra en cabo a aver *Aliz* 1422  
 ouiste en cabo en lo seco a afogar *Aliz* 1762  
 ovolo a alcançar *Aliz* 1965  
 ovo a asmar *Aliz* 2007  
 ouieronse . . . del canpo a alçar *Aliz* 2032  
 Ovo vn firme seso en cabo a asmar *Aliz* 2092  
 ovo grant tienpo con las bestias a andar *Alex* 2382

Also: *Aliz* 1568, 1722, 2092, etc. .

For further investigation of these phenomena, see other instances of *auer* with *a*-infinitive in:

*Cid* 169, 229, 322, 358, 431, 642, 953, 1145, 1181, 1210, 1260, 1666, 1667, 2220, 2321, 2661, 3235, 3312, 3451, 3470, 3523; *Sac* 91, 144, 146, 183, 286; *Duelo* 7, 45, 72, 168; *Mil* 87, 103, 127, 128, 134, 156, 185, 286, 296, 342, 379, 382, 430, 435, 512, 563, 592, 635, 636, 717, 741, 797; *Soria* 102, 163; *Sig.* 69; *SDom* 37, 111, 112, 126, 162, 223, 284, 357, 358, 416, 422, 423, 489, 509, 515, 551, 593, 641, 691, 696, 698, 724, 726; *Loor* 20, 119, 152, 182, 195, 197, 224, 226; *SMil* 26, 40, 47, 100, 104, 114, 146, 164, 208, 218, 272, 282, 291, 293, 343, 345, 348, 350, 367, 415, 453, 478; *SLaur* 27, 75, 77; *Aliz* 3, 20, 22, 25, 27, 41, 64, 77, 112, 148, 150, 151, 154, 156, 165, 166, 182, 193, 210, 214, 240, 260, 296, 311, 338, 344, 349, 359, 376, 377, 381, 382, 383, 389, 391, 393, 394, 409, 446, 447, 487, 498, 502, 512, 519, 528, 532, 549, 573, 574, 584, 585, 588, 590, 597, 603, 606, 618, 629, 653, 654, 675, 692, 705, 708, 719, 731, 734, 735, 758, 764, 772, 781, 819, 882, 887, 889, 892, 915, 963, 966, 981, 999, 1000,

1006, 1016, 1018, 1024, 1033, 1034, 1071, 1079, 1090, 1106,  
 1107, 1111, 1137, 1160, 1166, 1185, 1206, 1232, 1253, 1281,  
 1296, 1306, 1312, 1323, 1329, 1333, 1341, 1348, 1355, 1361,  
 1369, 1370, 1372, 1375, 1379, 1388, 1396, 1398, 1401, 1404,  
 1418, 1422, 1425, 1486, 1490, 1539, 1542, 1554, 1558, 1559,  
 1568, 1581, 1602, 1624, 1635, 1668, 1678, 1722, 1723, 1746,  
 1757, 1761, 1762, 1787, 1792, 1814, 1834, 1840, 1870, 1879,  
 1889, 1903, 1920, 1950, 1956, 1962, 1965, 1971, 1975, 1980,  
 1981, 1989, 1991, 2007, 2013, 2024, 2030, 2036, 2037, 2045,  
 2053, 2054, 2056, 2064, 2071, 2086, 2091, 2092, 2094, 2098,  
 2135, 2138, 2143, 2146, 2148, 2153, 2154, 2158, 2162, 2164,  
 2165, 2175, 2190, 2192, 2199, 2200, 2219, 2224, 2227, 2231,  
 2234, 2237, 2240, 2255, 2333, 2361, 2362, 2365, 2382, 2412,  
 2419, 2420, 2431, 2443, 2449, 2452, 2479, 2509, 2515, 2533,  
 2537, 2538, 2554, 2574, 2575, 2593, 2613, 2625, 2636, etc.

As is seen by comparing the citations with and without *a*, there is scarcely ever any difficulty in the sense of the passages, nor does the presence or the absence of the preposition affect the sense. In the same way it is difficult to see any appreciable difference in meaning between the *auer a* and the *auer de* constructions. The original function of the prepositions has become very faint indeed, and scholars such as Diez and Menéndez Pidal make little or no distinction between these prepositional uses of *auer*. *Auer a* is far more common than *auer de* in the texts studied, but by the time of Santillana, the *de*-infinitive had definitely won the victory.<sup>1</sup>

Examples of *auer* with *de*-infinitive:

como ha de seyer *Aliz* 375  
 Eneas por tanto ouo de escapar *Aliz* 528  
 he de seyer desbaratado *Aliz* 656  
 aue de moryr *Aliz* 658  
 como auie de far *Aliz* 803  
 como auien de fer *Aliz* 854  
 lo he de tragar *Aliz* 1358  
 Ouo de fincar oio Dario a do andaua *Aliz* 1364

<sup>1</sup> Diez, *Gram.* III, p. 217.



quando han a mouer, como han de posar *Aliz* 296  
 as mucho de veyer *Aliz* 297  
 ouo de parir *Aliz* 338  
 ouo de falar *Aliz* 363  
 non se ouo de vagar *Aliz* 1414  
 de ir he enpos ellos *SDom* 512  
 otras cosas muchas auemos de ueder *SDom* 222

*Auer* with *de*-infinitive also appears in: *Cid* 321, 354, 678, 834, 1136, 1449, 1656, 1721, 1876, 3320, 3321, 3324; *SDom* 222, 428, 488, 489, 512, 516, 526, 691, 719; *Sac* 6, 48, 86, 91; *SOria* 98, 140, 185; *SMill* 14, 197, 226, 234, 321, 486; *Duelo* 108, 125, 139; *Sig* 54, *Loor* 179; *Mil* 81, 462, 581, 635, 711, 797; *Aliz* 52, 296, 297, 311, 330, 335, 338, 358, 359, 363, 369, 375, 528, 624, 656, 658, 675, 780, 803, 854, 904, 947, 966, 1257, 1276, 1358, 1364, 1414, 1627, 1668, 1674, 1679, 1728, 1756, 1757, 1847, 1856, 1903, 1905, 2039, 2094, 2129, 2246, 2467, 2516, 2584, etc.

### ser.

Diez<sup>1</sup> considers *esse ad* to be the passive of *habere ad* and *de*. He cites an infinitive construction found in Latin that would seem at first to be the parent of the Romance form. Latin *est dicere, est credere*, etc. only expressed *possibility* (never the *periphrastic sense* of the *auer* and *ser* locutions), and were used impersonally while the derived languages regularly permit personal use in these constructions. Menéndez Pidal<sup>2</sup> agrees with Diez in calling *ser a* the passive of *auer a*, and adds that the modern equivalents are the impersonal *hay que* (for such cases as *es a fer*, *Cid* 2995), and *haber de* with intransitives (for *a passar es por nos*, *Cid* 3528, etc.). The texts studied offer only a small number of examples of *ser* with *a*-infinitive in comparison with the much more active *auer* locution. Practically all texts are represented, however. The infinitive constructions with *a* and *de* are found in about the same number

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, p. 218, 2.

<sup>2</sup> *Cid*, § 161, [2.

of passages, and show great similarity of sense and treatment. For *ser* with *de*-infinitive, see § 31.

son a aguardar *Cid* 1822  
 el debdo que a cada uno a conplir serave *Cid* 2365  
 debdo nos es a cunplir *Cid* 2598  
 es a parescer cada vno *Alix* 77  
 que sepades quantas serien las gentes ad asmar *Alix* 232  
 serie mucha sangre primero a uerter *Alix* 389  
 somos . . . a veyer *Alix* 487  
 seran a rrancar *Alix* 933  
 que . . . non sea a tomar *Alix* 1704  
 serie . . . grant cosa a ganar *Alix* 2079  
 era a mouer *SDom* 692  
 quando fuere el mundo a finir *Sac* 53  
 seran a porfazar *Loor* 53  
 somos a veer *Loor* 173  
 A tomar fo la alma *Mil* 209  
 ante fuera a prender *Mil* 388  
 a probar seredes *Mil* 550

The most frequent form of this locution is of course in the third person singular of the present. With this usually impersonal construction, the personal agent is expressed by *a* and *por* with the pronoun (*Por nos es a conplir toda esta vegada*, *Duelo* 95; *es a mi a conplir*, *Alix* 374).

es a fer *Cid* 2995, 3241  
 a passar es por nos *Cid* 3528  
 el algo deste mundo todo es a perder *Alix* 71  
 es . . . todo a oluidar *Alix* 240  
 es a mi a conplir *Alix* 374  
 es esto a poner *Alix* 623  
 es a yr *Alix* 656  
 el bien desti mundo todo es a perder *Alix* 753  
 es avn a caher *Alix* 782  
 a tierra es a tornar *Alix* 1790  
 es toda cosa a quebrar *Alix* 1881

## THE INFINITIVE WITH POR

46. It will be remembered that expression of *purpose* was remarked as one of the functions of the preposition *a*. It was not, however, stated as its most characteristic or primary sense. *Purpose* is the most characteristic phase of *por*, and derives from the Latin *pro*. It expresses the purpose of an action more naturally and more vividly than the general and varied *a*-construction. Menéndez Pidal gives as the three concepts involved in *por*:<sup>1</sup>

1. *la falta de realización de la acción del infinitivo regido*
2. *el fin*
3. *el motivo*

This sums up in brief the most important functions of *por*, though each of the above subdivisions is sufficiently broad to deserve considerable individual attention. Yet these are the three basic senses of *por* that are seen so currently in Old Spanish. The first is largely confined to the verbs *ser*, *estar*, *auer*, *fincar*, and *yazer* (*li estaba por exir la almiella*, SMill 343; *yazie por morirse*, Cron 717b13). It is also responsible in large part for the independent *por*-infinitive, such as *por poblar e pobladas*, SMill 477. The second is quite general, covering as did *a*, the transitives, intransitives, reflexives (*adobar*, *andar*, *guisarse*: *anda por la fe guerrear*, SLaur 29; *guisosse por yr a ueella*, Cron 38b19). The class of *por*-infinitives denoting *purpose* and depending on a whole clause is larger than that with any other preposition. The relation between the infinitive and the finite verb of the sentence may vary in intensity from that of object-infinitive, in which the relation is at its closest, to that of dependence on the whole clause, in which the relation is at its weakest. Examples of the more evident relations will be given below. The *por*-infinitive in the third sense mentioned above (*cause*) usually does not depend on any single verb (*era aquel puerto tenido por el mejor de toda Affrica, por estar y navios en todo tiempo*, Cron 48b19).

<sup>1</sup> See also Hanssen, *Gram.*, pp. 303-307.

One territory in which *a* does not at all rival *por* is in use with adjectives and participles. This is one of the strongest classes of *por*-infinitives, while with *a* it is almost non-existent.

An illustration of the difficulty met in classifying instances of the *por*-infinitive is found in the listing by Meyer-Lübke<sup>1</sup> under *purpose* clauses of the following: *no lo querie nul hombre por derecho judgar*, *Por tu dormir con ella e nos yr a lidiar*, Alix 454; and *entraron en Estremadura por ser tierra rica*, Nov. ej., 27. The first of these citations offers a very delicate problem, but that *Por tu dormir* here expresses *purpose* seems to me highly improbable. It would be more natural to consider the whole clause introduced by *por* as being in apposition with *lo*, since it is the sense of the whole clause that is judged as not right. Indeed, it would be as good a construction, and certainly more regular, simply to omit the *por* entirely, in which case the infinitive would be considered as a substantive in apposition with *lo*, and a normal sentence result (cf. *lo que era peor de todo, uenir los dAffrica a Roma*, Cron 45a49, § 79). The second citation is fortunately much simpler than this, and permits easy recognition of the *por*-infinitive expressing the *cause* of the action (cf. *se preciauan por alañar*, Cron 431b31, § 56). The *por*-infinitive also expresses *concession*, and indicates the *means* of an action: *concession* in *Ca esto que uos queredes aun por seer uençudos, lo que Dios no quiera, puedes lo fazer en el cabo*, Cron 73b20; and the *means* of the action in *sy omne non gana prez por dezir o por fer*, Alix 71).

#### THE *POR*-INFINITIVE WITH A SUBSTANTIVE

47. There are certain cases in which the *por*-infinitive depends on a noun rather than on an individual verb. These are rare at best, and the relations involved are sometimes loose, but certain instances of infinitive usage can be explained by no other theory (e.g. *el plazdo por el reyno quitar*,

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, § 506.

Cid 392, cited by Menéndez Pidal). Other passages offering somewhat similar constructions are found as follows:

Puerta de pecadores por al cielo entrar *Himnos* 2. 1  
 el plazdo por el reyno quitar *Cid* 392  
 dos pedones solos por la puerta guardar *Cid* 686  
 Non es agora tiempo por en naves entrar *Soria* 159  
 Nol dolie so lazerio por las almas salvar *SMill* 282  
 por entrar alos cielos sangue faz el camino *Sac* 98  
 por deparar los buenos busca sienpre sendero *Alix* 1948

In the last citation above, *busca sendero* may be taken as governing *por deparar*, rather than the noun *sendero* alone. Of the same type is noted another *buscar* locution: *Por yr a Paraysobuscaualis carrera*, *SDom* 464. As can be seen in such cases, the infinitive but rarely offers clear evidence of depending on the noun alone.

#### THE POR-INFINITIVE DEPENDS ON AN ADJECTIVE

48. With adjectives *por* nearly always indicates *purpose*, and the infinitive is very rarely susceptible of a passive sense, as in *la corral es viunrosa, buena por alargar*, *Alix* 2109. Generally, when such a relation is to be expressed, the preposition *de* appears (*digno de adorar*, *SDom* 253). With these adjectives, the past participles of various verbs are included (*osado, pagado*, etc.), even though at times their verbal force somewhat exceeds their adjectival sense (*uenido*, etc.). The exact gradation of adjectival and of verbal force is of course indeterminate, though examples of both extremes are available. For instance, *osado* has lost most of its participial value, while *vestido* has little else: *por canpear a ellos sol non somos osados*, *Alix* 596; *Velmezes vestidos por sufrir las guarniziones*, *Cid* 3073. Only the more striking syntactical relations will be pointed out under the various adjectives and participles. The infinitive with *de, en, pora* and *para* is also found in adjectival constructions (*eran buenas pora ganar e deffender tierra*, *Cron* 22a3; *en veer muy çerteros*, *Sig* 55; *nunca para comer vi cosa tan ligera*, *Alix* 799; *ligera de fazer*, *Cron* 420b11).

*Adjectives.*

**bueno** (also takes infinitive with *de*, *pora* and *para*).

buená por alargar *Aliz* 2109

**digno** (used also with *de*-infinitive).

Asi mandas tus carnes, e assi las aguissas

Que por subir a los cielos tu digna te predigas *Soria* 36

**firme.**

Ellos por alargarse, los otros por redrarlos,

estauan todos firmes, señores e vasallos *Aliz* 2054

**goloso.**

estaua cada vná por ganarla golosa *Aliz* 326

**grande** (also cited by Menéndez Pidal as an adjective of *quantity* taking *por*-infinitive in Old Spanish, and *para* in the modern language).

grandes son los poderes por con ellos lidiar *Cid* 669

Grant serie la matheria por en ambos hablar *SLaur* 17

**plazentero.**

Por seguir tu conseio so muy bien plazentero *Sac* 42

**presto.**

prestos somos por conplir tu mandado *Aliz* 195

presto fue Filotas por luego lo vengar *Aliz* 999

presto estaua por los guardar sanos *Cron* 134a4

**sabroso** (employed also with *de*-infinitive).

Tienpo dulce e sabroso por abastir casamientos *Aliz* 1930

**tal.**

sy fuesen de tal guisa por auer rremedidos *Aliz* 1258

**tan** (though in this form an adverb of *degree*, I include it here from its natural association with adjectives of *quantity*. There is only one case).

ca non so tan letrado por fer otro latino *SDom* 2

*Participles.*

More variety of sense and of usefulness is found in the participles taking the *por*-infinitive than in the regular adjectives above. This might be expected from their having both verbal and adjectival force, thus facilitating many fine distinctions in function and connotation. Representatives of most of the other classes of verbs taking *por*-infinitive are noted here, such as *venido* for the intransitive verbs of movement, *enviado* for the transitives, etc. (*fui . . . enviado Por recibir martirio, seer crucificado*, Duelo 82; *por vengar mi despecho debes seer pagado*, Alix 2413). These instances and a number of others might well be cited under the verb itself rather than under the participle, but are given here for purposes of comparison. Certain participles allow themselves to be grouped together because of similarity of meaning, such as those equivalent to the English *prepared for*, *ready to*, etc. These naturally take the *por*-infinitive in the majority of instances, though they can, with a slight shift of sense, have the preposition *de*. They are fairly numerous, but with sufficient individual force to keep them from being real synonyms. Of these the most important are: *adobado*, *aguisado*, *aparecido*, *apareiado*, *guisado* (*por batalla le dar estava aguisado*, Alix 1165; *estava el bien guisado por yr a Espanna*, Cron 101b11). Others express in varying quality attitude toward or desire for something: *adenodado*, *asaborgado*, *aviuado*, *cuytado*, *demetido*, *denodado*, *endiablado*, *pagado*, *saborgado*. In any case, the prevailing concept in the *por*-infinitive with these participles is that of purpose, more definite than in *a*, less definite than in *pora* and *para*. Few of the participles noted below occur more than once (viz., *aguisado*, *apareiado*, *denodado*, *guisado*). The *Crónica* shows a preference for the *pora*-infinitive, and the poetry for the construction with *por* (*apareiado pora foyr*, Cron 379b33;  *fueron apareiados por fer su cumplimjento*, SDom 615). The *para*-infinitive is strangely lacking with participles, though used with adjectives (*buena . . . para librar sus moros*, Cron 746a50). *Andar* and *venir* give greater vividness of expres-

sion than *ser* and *estar* when used as auxiliaries with these participles (*por dar en Alixandre andauan acordados*, Alix 1339; *por feryr a Nicanor vino muy demetido*, Alix 1011).

**aconsejado.**

eran por foyr del todos aconsejados Alix 1387

**acordado** (noted also with *en*-infinitive).

por dar en Alixandre andauan acordados Alix 1339

**adebdado** (used with *de*-infinitive also).

Por façer el tu ruego mucho so adebdada Soria 154

**adenodado** (cf. *denodado* below).

Vynien adenodados por la villa entrar,  
por enforçar a Paris e a ella quemar,  
prender todos los otros e la villa hermar Alix 486  
por entrar a la isla fueron a denodados Alix 1983

**aguisado** (considerably the most frequent of these participles with the *por*-infinitive; also used with *de*-infinitive; cf. *guisado* below). The use of *mal* and *bien* with *aguisado* is particularly to be noted.

por defendernos somos mal aguisados Alix 873  
por fer buen bernaje estan mal aguisados Alix 949  
por tenprar el ayre todas bien aguisadas Alix 1521  
Seo mal aguisado por ante él paresçer Sig 64

Also: Alix 1288, 1437, 1815; Cid 2322.

**apareçido.**

¡ estos casamientos non fuessen apareçidos,  
por consagrar con Myo Çid don Rodrigo ! Cid 3356

**apareiado** (employed also with *de*- and *pore*-infinitives):

Por resçeibir la gracia estaban apareiados Loor 154  
fueron apareiados por fer su cumplimjento SDom 615



**asaborgado** (cf. *saborgado* below).

fueron asaborgados por esperar el plazo *Aliz* 718

**auiuado** (taking also *en-* and *pora-*infinitives).

muy auiuados por lidiar *Cron* 501a1

**cuytado**.

vio que andaua cuytado por moryr *Aliz* 1045

**demandado**.

Demandado fue Filotas por seyer lapidado *Aliz* 1886

**demetido**.

por feryr a Nicanor vino muy demetido *Aliz* 1011

**denodado** (used also with *pora-*infinitive; cf. *adenodado* above).

por feryr se con el vino muy denodado *Aliz* 509

por yr luego ferir los eran muy denodados *Aliz* 1278

**escollido**.

fueron escollidos por seyer delanteros *Aliz* 2023

**endiablado**.

Vinie endiablado . . . por dar ad Alixandre grant golpe *Aliz* 1346

**fazendado**.

por caher sobre Belsus andaua fazendado *Aliz* 1887

**guisado** (used also with *de-* and *pora-*infinitives).

estaua el bien guisado por yr a Espanna *Cron* 101b11

teniendo sus huestes guisadas por lidiar otro dia *Cron* 198b53

**mouido** (*pora-*infinitive also used).

fueron todas mouidas por yr al fontanar *Aliz* 2138

**osado** (more frequently employed with *de-*infinitive).

por canpear a ellos sol non somos osados *Aliz* 596

**pagado**.

por vengar mi despecho debes seyer pagado *Aliz* 2413

**saborgado** (*asaborgado* is also used with *por*-infinitive).

Era toda la gent por irse saborgada *Mil* 838

**trametido.**

por sacar te daquende so de Dios trametido *SDom* 655

**uenido.**

The adjectival function of *uenido* is emphasized by the use of *ser* instead of *auer*; cf. French *je suis venu*.

Yo so aquj uenjdo por ati uisitar *SDom* 719

### THE *POR*-INFINITIVE AS OBJECT

49. The origin of this construction lies in the *purpose* sense so regular in *por*. It often seems a far cry to hark back to this basic relation between verb and infinitive, as the tendency is to make the connection so close that the two are thought of as almost a unit. This is, of course, characteristic of the object relation and the more frequent the locution is, the closer the two parts become in the mind of the speaker. The most highly developed example of this is the Romance future, where the two parts do become in fact a unit (*dar-e, je donnerai*, etc.). Here there was no preposition, so the component parts were permitted to stand together. With *por*, this closeness of relation is vastly weakened, yet there is a certain sense of unity to be felt between verb and infinitive. Only about ten verbs are included in this group, none of them very common with *por*-infinitive in the early language, but having when so used a shade of meaning (*will* or *purpose*) that cannot be found in their more frequent *de-* or *a-*locutions (*cobdiciando casar*, Cron 454a18; *andauan cobdiciando por auer la guardia del ninno*, Cron 669a19; *cobdiciaua de seer el solo sennor de tod ell imperio*, Cron 81a5; *cobdiciaua mucho a ueer la su muerte*, Cron 429a2). As seen in these citations, the *de*-infinitive breaks the absolute object relation less than the infinitive with either *a* or *por* (cf. the antiquated and vulgar *he hoped for to go*).

**aguisar.**

The *de*-infinitive occurs with *aguisado*. The transitive and reflexive forms are noted with *pora*.

Estaua aguisando por entrar en carrera *Aliz* 1623

**catar.**

This is one of the more natural of the *por*-locutions (cf. English *to look for*). The pure infinitive occurs once, but in sense like *ver*, etc. The similarity in construction of the *por*-infinitive with *al* is to be noted in the first citation below.

non cato por al sinon por aguijar el cauallo *Cron* 404a36

catando por librar a su sennor *Cron* 670b30

cataron por contender en matar los enemigos *Cron* 704a19

**cobdiçiar.**

The pure, *a*- and *de*-infinitives are also noted with *cobdiçiar* (cf. English *to wish for*).

andauan cobdiçiando por auer la guardia del ninno *Cron* 669a19

**dexar.**

With the *por*-infinitive *dexar* has the sense of *to leave off*, hence *to cease*, *to fail to*, the same as with the *de*- and *a*-infinitives, as contrasted with its pure infinitive use of *to leave in* the sense of *to allow* (cf. the English vulgarism *leave him do it*).

plogo a Dios que non dexassen por enssayar el castiello, maguer que semeiaua grieue de combater *Cron* 695b27

**endurar.**

This verb approximates the sense of *sufrir*. No other infinitive use is noted.

Mas el non enduro por y gelo lleuar *Aliz* 202

**pedir.**

Like *catar*, *pedir* would seem a natural member of this class (cf. English *to ask for*, etc.), though the only example at hand has both noun object and *por*-infinitive taking that object as subject:

piden sus fijas a mio Çid el Campeador,  
por seer reinas de Navarra e de Aragón *Cid* 3399

**pensar.**

This verb takes the infinitive with *a* and *de*, as well as without preposition, but the *de*-construction is alone frequent.

penso por yr a Libia *Alix* 1148

**poner.**

The *de*-infinitive is more common than the *por*-construction with *poner*. *En*- and *a*-infinitives also occur, but not with objective function. The contrast in *por*-infinitives in this case is interesting:

han puesto por matarlo, por aver los onores *Alix* 1709

**yurar (j-).**

The *de*-infinitive is found more currently with this verb.

los nuestros enemigos yurado an por tener con la nemiga et  
desapoderar a nos *Cron* 74a5

anbos son sobre ti por matarte jurados *Alix* 1669

**POR-INFINITIVE WITH TRANSITIVE VERBS (OBJECT PRESENT)**

50. This class includes such verbs as *adobar*, *aguisar* and *combidar*, which generally take a noun or pronoun object as well as the *por*-infinitive. They are entirely normal in their construction, as can be seen from the predominance of the sense of *purpose* in the *por*. The difference between this group and the last one discussed (*por*-infinitive as object) can be seen by comparing instances with and without noun or pronoun object: *Estaua aguisando por entrar en carrera*, *Alix* 1623; *Aguisaron el cuerpo . . . Por darli sepultura*, *SMill* 312. The most striking illustration is found in *dexar* (with pronoun object present, the *por*-infinitive clearly expresses *purpose*, while without such object and with *por*, *a* or *de*, the locution means *to cease*, etc.): *dexol por enterrar*, *Cron* 674b14; . . . *que non dexassen por ensayar el castiello, maguer que semeiava griue de combater*, *Cron* 695b27. Although the cases below easily become clear instances of clausal dependence, there is felt to be a greater attraction exerted by the main verb for

the *por*-infinitive than would be found in ordinary dependence of the infinitive on a clause.

**adobar.**

The infinitive with *de* also appears with the transitive *adobar*. The reflexive likewise takes *por*-infinitive (*estos se adoban por ir con el Campeador*, Cid 1997).

adobaua poderes e misiones por venir al canpo *Aliz* 2124

**aguisar.**

*Pora*-infinitive is also found with the transitive *aguisar*, and with the reflexive *aguisarse*.

agujsaron su cosa por fer su romeria *SDom* 407

Aguisaron el cuerpo . . . Por darli sepultura e ferli proçession  
*SMill* 312

. . . como aguisarie poyo . . . por veyer todo el mundo *Aliz*  
2460

**combidar.**

Combidara los iustos Dios por regnar consigo *Loor* 175

**dexar.**

The infinitive is here susceptible of a passive sense; cf. discussion at head of this chapter, and *dexar*, §49.

dexol por enterrar *Cron* 674b14

**enbiar (enu-).**

The pure and *a*-infinitives are much more frequent with *enbiar*. The infinitive also occurs sporadically with *pora*, as with *por*, emphasizing the element of *purpose*.

Enbionos . . . por descobrir las cosas que jazen sofondidas  
*Aliz* 2269

enuio luego tres caualleros . . . por barruntar que poder tenie  
*Cron* 26a5

**escoger.**

*De*-infinitive is also used with *escoger*, but clearly as an object infinitive (*escogieron de perder antes la franqueza que no la uida*, *Cron* 228a37).

a mi non escogiera por fer su vxor *Aliz* 350

**judgar.**

The *de*-infinitive is also used with *judgar*.

fue judgando el omne por morir e lazarar *Aliz* 2515

**meter.**

This verb forms a number of interesting noun locutions with *por*-infinitive, as well as similar constructions with the prepositions *de* and *en* (*En buscarli serviçio methie toda femença*, Mil 50; *metie en complirlo toda su voluntad*, SDom 263; *leuaua en coraçon de matar all yerno*, Cron 181a52; . . . *que uos meta en coraçon de sacarle ende*, Cron 355a20). *Purpose* shaded with *goal* is felt in *por*, as contrasted with the *objective de*-construction and the purely *goal* function of *en*.

*meter corazon*:

Por fer toda nemiga metien los corazones *SMill* 221

*meter estudio*:

Metien bien so estudio por mucho li onrar *SMill* 307

*meter poder*:

por defender su rey todo poder metieron *Aliz* 2219

*meter voluntad*:

por saluar señor tan grant voluntad miso *Aliz* 1678

**prometer (voto).**

The *de*-object occurs most often with *prometer*.

por partirme del mundo voto e prometido *SMill* 16

**THE POR-INFINITIVE WITH INTRANSITIVE VERBS OF MOTION**

51. The reflexives following this group, and these intransitive verbs of motion, form the two largest classes of *por*-infinitive taking verbs. The intransitives are among the verbs most frequently employed by the language, while the reflexives are used rather sporadically as individual verbs. The *por*-infinitive defines the *purpose* of an action more clearly than the pure infinitive or that with *a*, and rather less clearly than that with *pora* and *para*, inasmuch as these last combine the vir-

tues of both *por* and *a* (*reçebir los sale*, Cid 297; *salíolos a recebir*, Cron 342b47; *andaua por casar con ella*, Cron 647a23; *salio . . . pora yr degollar el carnero*, Cron 504a51; *sedien para oyr la toda la gent quedada*, SDom 566). Of these five possible methods of expressing the closely merged relations of *goal* and *purpose*, the weaker pure and *a*-infinitives recur very much more frequently than the others. The *para*-infinitive did not develop to any great extent until somewhat later in the language. While *pora* was reserved for the *purpose* (including *goal*) sense only, *por* was more general and might express *concession*, *means*, *cause*, etc. *Morir*, *nacer* and *contender* are included in the list below, although they are not strictly verbs of motion, the first two designating a change of condition and the third implying motion only by its connotation.

The *por*-infinitive frequently depends on a *goal*-clause, the main verb of which expresses motion. Such cases may closely resemble the regular construction with these verbs (see §53, §62 and §66 for *por*- and *pora*-infinitive in clausal dependence):

yre y . . . por complir uestua uoluntad Cron 435a12  
yas mueuen adelant por a mio Cid . . . a manos los tomar Cid 701

#### andar.

Emphasis is indicated in *andar* by its appearance only once with *a*, and not at all with pure infinitive, as against six cases with *por*. This is the converse of the usual situation with verbs of motion (e.g. *yr*). *En*-infinitive occurs, but with the *place* element of *en* conspicuous (*yo ando en seruicio de Dios et en uengar el mal*, Cron 564a33). In *Paris andaua muerto por a Etor vengar*, Alix 705, *andaua* acts as auxiliary to *muerto*, there being then no special dependence of the infinitive on *andaua*.

andaua por casar con ella Cron 647a23  
Andaua por mouerlas Alix 236  
anda por lo fer Alix 683  
El diablo andaba por ferse del seguro Loor 46  
Andas por confonder toda christiandat SLaur 43  
. . . anda por la fe guerrear,  
Quiere fer los christianos a Christo denegar SLaur 29

**contender.**

Infinitive constructions with *de*, *pora* and *en* are also noted with *contender*. This is in keeping with the unsettled prepositional habits of verbs of *striving* in general (e.g. *punnar*, *trabaiar*).

contendie . . . por fer matar a Etor *Alix* 662

Contendia por levarlos todos a meioria *SMill* 96

Contendie el bon omne . . . Por fincar los inoios *Mil* 489

**correr.**

No other infinitive construction is noted with *correr*.

corrien por çevarse *Alix* 2466

**endereçar.**

The infinitives with *a* and *pora* are also used with *endereçar*.

endereço por darle del pendon señalado *Alix* 465

**yr.**

This verb is frequent in all the infinitive constructions associated with verbs of motion (except the *de* of *separation*): *a*, *por*, *pora*, *para*, and without preposition. The less emphatic constructions occur most often in the poetry (the infinitive being pure or with *a*), while the few available instances of the *por*-infinitive definitely dependent on *yr* come largely from the *Crónica*. French well illustrates the use of the pure infinitive with its equivalent of *yr*, expressing the *goal* (or very weak *purpose*) of the action (*je vais le voir*). The *inceptive* sense of *yr* with pure infinitive is seen to be intensified by the use of *yr* directly with *por*-infinitive (*Fue por darle con ella*, *Alix* 470; *fue por besar la mano al rey*, *Cron* 419b46; *fueron abrazarla*, *Soria* 60). The *por*-infinitive is more often dependent on an *yr*-clause than on *yr* alone: *Yban al omne bueno por con el se morar*, *SMill* 253; *eran ydos al palacio por oyr aquellas nuevas*, *Cron* 603a23; also *Cid* 3081; *SDom* 360; *Alix* 1697, 2493; *Cron* 422a25, 435a12.

ya por dar della a Munno Salido *Cron* 437b30

fue por ferirle con ella *Cron* 447b43

ya por passar a Siria *Cron* 544a5



**exir, issir.**

There is more often dependence of the *por*-infinitive on an *exir* clause than on *exir* alone: *querrie del castiello fuera seer exido*, *Por tornar a los montes*, *SMill* 23; also *Aliz* 321, 653, 735; *SDom* 455, 764.

yxiera . . . por saber . . . *Aliz* 602

Yssieron los de dentro por con ellos lidiar *SMill* 291

exio . . . por guerrear aMoros, entrar en caualgada *SDom* 700

**morir.**

Emphasis is natural to *morir*, so that it is not surprising to find the *por*-infinitive used where other weaker infinitive constructions are lacking. The popular English construction *he is dying for (a) drink* is more or less paralleled in the first citation below.

semeias al itropico que muere por beuer,

quanto mas va beuiendo el mas puede arder *Aliz* 1903

muere por ganar al *Aliz* 2297

murie por ser martir, prender por Dios passion *SLaur* 23

**naçer.**

Cf. *morir* above.

por salvar el mundo naçio *SMill* 223

**puiar.**

The *a*-infinitive also occurs. This verb is a good illustration of close dependence of the *por*-infinitive on the verb of motion.

tanto puio la su nemiga por ayuntar et acrescentar en si mas  
de lixo *Cron* 304b10

**venir (u-).**

The pure infinitive and the constructions with *a*, *de* and *pora* are also used with *venir*. About one half of the available examples of *por*-infinitive come from the *Crónica*. The prepositional constructions, here as elsewhere, recur more often in the prose than in the poetry. The *Cid*, for example, gives only

one single instance of *venir* with *por*, while the later texts affect the locution with greater frequency. As was true of *yr*, the *por*-infinitive is more often dependent on a *venir* clause than on *venir* alone: *vin a ti por seguir tu mandado*, Mil 729; also *S Mill* 483; *Mil* 137, 729; *SDom* 476; *Alix* 680; *Cron* 360b8, 447b27, 533a21, 548b40, 602b25, 616b48, 642a45.

Si viéredes yentes venir por connusco ir *Cid* 388

Venie . . . por con ellos iogar *Mil* 355

por uelar al sepulcro ujno muy grant yente *SDom* 565

ambos bienen, bien sepas, por amj guerrear *SDom* 695

fue venido por las armas prender *Alix* 119

era venido por Alixandre matar *Alix* 1107

vinie por acorrerles *Alix* 1356

Also: *Cron* 28b20, 35a18, 570b20, 596a23, 640a2.

#### POR-INFINITIVE WITH REFLEXIVE VERBS

52. The reflexives form a well-recognized group with each of the prepositions expressing *purpose* (and *goal*), though none of the verbs cited below for the *por*-infinitive occur frequently in this use. There is found to be a closer relation of these verbs with the *pore*-group than with those taking the *a*-infinitive. In general the *a*-construction was too weak in its expression of *purpose* to satisfy the needs of these particular verbs, while *pore* was even stronger than *por* in this desired element (combining with *por* the *goal* function of *a*). *Guisarse* (cf. of the same type *adobarse* and *armarse*) undoubtedly illustrates best the kind of verb appearing currently in infinitive constructions having *por*, *pore* and *para*, but not at all in *a*-constructions (*guisosse por yr a ueella*, *Cron* 38b19; *guisosse pore yr a Carthago*, *Cron* 25b15; *guisandose para venir*, *Cron* 355a43). *Motion* is actual or implied in *abaxarse*, *ajuntarse*, *juntarse* and *levantarse*, while distantly related to this type are *escalentarse* and *trabaiarse*. The reflexives readily lend themselves to clausal dependence in the *por*-infinitive: *alçose a la sierra por mas saluo estar*, *Alix* 2076.

**abaxarse.**

abaxosse por besarle los pies *Cron* 531a36

**acordarse.**

Infinitive constructions with *a*, *de* and *en* are also found with *acordarse*.

Acordose el rey . . . por yr a Babiloña *Aliz* 1438

Acordaron se todos . . . por rezebir al rey *Aliz* 2481

**adobarse.**

No other infinitive constructions are at hand for *adobarse*, but the transitive *adobar* takes particularly the *de*-infinitive.

pensaua en qual guisa se podrie meior adobar por fazer en aquellos . . . que siempre ende fablassen *Cron* 286a32

**aluoroçarse.**

. . . que se le no aluoroço yente ninguna por leuantar guerra *Cron* 108a49

**armarse.**

armosse . . . por yr dar fazienda a los moros *Cron* 426b5

**ayuntarse (aj-).**

The *a*- and *pora*-infinitives also occur. With *ayuntar*, *pora*-infinitive is found. *Fazer duelo* is noted in both cases below.

quierense ajuntar por fazer grant duelo *Cron* 576b11

se querien ayuntar por fazer duelo *Cron* 577b4

**escalentarse.**

por serujr aDon Christo mas se escalentaua *SDom* 249

**guisarse.**

Infinitive constructions with *de*, *pora* and *para* also appear with *guisarse*; cf. discussion at head of chapter.

guisosse por yr a ueerla *Cron* 38b19

en guisarse por yr *Cron* 102a2

guisosse por passar *Cron* 102b1

se guiso Alarico . . . por yr ganar las Francias *Cron* 208b18

**juntarse.**

muchos se juntaron de buenos ricos omnes por veer esta lid  
*Cid* 3546

**leuantarse.**

The pure infinitive and that with *de*, *a*, and *pora* are also used with *leuantarse*.

leuantosse por yr su uia *Cron* 146a36

**trabaiarse.**

This verb appears more often with the pure, *de*- and *en*-infinitives. When with *por*, there is a definite purpose expressed.

Erodes bien se quiso affirmes trabaiar  
Por al rey manço la vida destaiar *Duelo* 199  
se trabaiaba mucho por deffender la nuestra fe *Cron* 154b35

#### THE POR-INFINITIVE DEPENDS ON A CLAUSE

53. Because of the strength of *por*, *pora* and *para* in the expression of *purpose*, the infinitive with these prepositions is better suited to dependence on a clause than is either the *a*-infinitive or that without preposition. The dependence of the *por*-infinitive at times is so slight that the more pronounced instances may for convenience be termed "independent *por*-clauses of purpose." The construction of the sentence is usually loose, and the *por*-clause may have even greater prominence than the clause it is presumed to depend on (*Por ferlis bien creença, por seer bien creído, Disso que a los XXX dias serie transido*, *Mil* 266; *Por ganar la Gloriosa que él mucho amaba, Partielo con los pobres todo quanto ganaba*, *Mil* 133).

In *Io so aquí venida por levarte comigo*, *Mil* 137, the locative adverb *aquí* puts the *por*-infinitive in the category of dependence on a *goal*-clause, since there is only a question of degree and definiteness between this and such instances as *vin a ti por seguir tu mandado*, *Mil* 729; *torna a diestro por la missa acabar*, *Sac* 53; *Entraron a Pilato por conseio tomar*, *Duelo* 166. An even more inconspicuous type than that with

the adverbs of *place* is at hand in *querien . . . llegarsele por dezirle alguna cosa*, Cron 449b50, where the *le* of *llegarsele* completes the goal-clause quite as effectively as *a los montes* in *Entrestí a los montes por a mí guerrear*, SMill 114. Very often the *por*-infinitive satisfies the needs of both the individual verb and the clause as well: *enuiaua alla Yalia a aquel su privado por saber . . .* Cron 548a39; *Contendí el buen omne, quieresse levantar, Por fincar los inoios, los pides li besar*, Mil 489. From time to time a notable difference will be found between construction of the *por*-infinitive with the individual verb and with the clause: e.g. the introduction of *al conde* breaks the *inceptive* sense of *ir* with dependent *por*-infinitive (*fue por besar la mano al rey*, Cron 603a23) in *fue al conde por pagarle ell auer*, Cron 422a25; the use of *el cuerpo* as object prevents the *por*-infinitive from itself replacing the object in *Aquisaron el cuerpo del precioso varon, Por darli sepultura e ferli proçession*, SMill 312. There is usually no difficulty in sense, however, whether the *por*-infinitive depends on the verb or on the clause: *Si viéredes yentes venir por connusco ir*, Cid 388; *vinieron a estas bodas por onrrar el Qid*, Cron 602b25. The *por*-infinitive sometimes depends on a well-known verb and noun locution, as in *por meter se en armas ningún vagar non se dieron*, Alix 586 (*darse vagar*); *Boluio con el guerra por non seyer reptado*, Alix 157 (*volver guerra*).

por ir con estas dueñas buena compañía se faze Cid 1421

El rey dioles fideles por dezir el derecho Cid 3593

por veyer mas alexos tolliense los sonbreros Alix 252

Sosaco Vlixes vna grant maestria por saber sy . . . Alix 397

por fazer olocaustos, matauan los ganados Alix 458

echo de cuer la lança por a Ajas matar Alix 492

por pagar los santos todos cantauan lixirios Alix 552

Fue a prender el canto . . . por aquedar a Ajas Alix 571

por vengarse de la yra oluido piedat Alix 696

frieron se las diestras por seyer mas leales *Aliz* 577

guardasselo de yerro e de mortal sofismo,  
por non perder el pacto *SDom* 78

Por exaltar su fama, el su preçio creçer,  
Derramaba sin duelo quanto podie aver *Mil* 628

por espantar la dueña, que oujesse pabura,  
faziali malos gestos, mucha mala figura *SDom* 327

por vengar su despecho o por preçio ganar,  
sufrieron tal lazerio qual oyestes contar *Aliz* 750

Fue buscar al diablo sabidor e artero,  
Por cobrar un officio *Mil* 840

Las estrellas . . . por el dia tardar, andauan a pereça *Aliz* 2567

dexose caer de la cama por besar los pies al apostol *Cron* 634a6

Deçendio al Infierno por rrecabdar su mandado *Aliz* 2403

deçendio por a Yndia . . . por entender de Dario sy era alli  
tornado *Aliz* 1620

endereço a el por le ferir *Cron* 606b16

por comer a solas entran en los çilleros *Alex* 2363

Desent tornar al nuevo, por en çierto andar *Sac* 2

salio a ellos . . . por uedargelo *Cron* 554a45

passa aquent mar por me toller esta çibdat *Cron* 633b12

pasara de allen mar por mandar el Andalozia *Cron* 740a46

yre y . . . por complir uuestra uoluntad *Cron* 435a12

Also: *Cid* 701; *Aliz* 705, 831, 1351, 1554, 1697, 1705, 2493;  
*Sac* 30, 53; *SDom* 173, 360; *SMill* 244; *Cron* 471a38, 558b21,  
585b38, 633a37, 759a49, etc.

#### THE POR-INFINITIVE INDICATES FUTURITY

54. Menéndez Pidal says of this construction:<sup>1</sup> "La preposición *por*, con los verbos *ser* ó *auer*, expresa la falta de realización de la acción del infinitivo regido." In illustration of this principle he cites *tres [días] an por troçir*, *Cid* 307. This is

<sup>1</sup> *Cid*, § 161, 4.

not as representative a citation as might be desired, since the *por* may well be fulfilling here its ordinary function of *purpose*, and there is no reason why a *purpose* clause should be limited in time. A better example, cited in the same paragraph as that above, is *ninguno sodes por pagar*, where *por pagar* would clearly indicate the unfulfilment of the action were it not for the negative sense of *ninguno*. The *por*-infinitive, then, may mark the action of the infinitive as belonging to the future, and with little or no reference as to the actual accomplishment of that action. Even in the cases when the future is indicated as *immediate* (when *por* means *on the point of, about to*) there is nothing to show that the action will be completed (*estauan todos por perder se*, Cron 76a10).

This class includes such verbs as *auer*, *estar*, *ser*, *fincar*, and *yazer*, the latter two of which have not been generally recognized along with the first three in this use. Even with these verbs that take the *por*-infinitive to express the incompleteness of the action of the infinitive, there is a decided trace of the fundamental function of *purpose* in *por* (*tres [días] an por troçir*, Cid 307). Likewise in *por casar son vuestras fijas*, Cid 1650, a certain degree of *purpose* can be felt along with the simple *futurity* of *por casar*. In Cid 3283 there is an idiomatic use of *auer* with *por*-infinitive that is approximately equal to *auer que* with infinitive, according to Menéndez Pidal:<sup>1</sup> *¿Qué avedes vos, comde, por retraer la mi barba?* Other illustrations of *auer* with *por*-infinitive follow (in each instance the infinitive is *far*):

non fuera menester que lo ouiese por far *Aliz* 118

querria lo que fiziera Tebas auer por far *Aliz* 213

*estar*.

Meyer-Lübke notes<sup>2</sup> that *stare* and *essere per* (in Spanish and Portuguese *ser* and *estar* with *por* and *para*) indicate an action as *on the point of* being accomplished. He does not remark on that kindred sense of *por* with these verbs, noted

<sup>1</sup> *Cid*, § 161, 4.

<sup>2</sup> *Gram.* III, § 330.

by Menéndez Pidal and called *falta de realización*. There may not be a great difference between these two senses, yet a distinction doubtless exists. While mentioning the Spanish equivalents of *stare* and *essere* that have this particular future meaning, Meyer-Lübke mentions *estar* with *por* and *para* but says nothing of *ser* with these infinitive constructions. Diez<sup>1</sup> points out that *ser* with *por*-infinitive indicates *possibility*. At least it indicates a more indefinite *futurity* than *estar* with *por*, as can be noted by contrasting *li estaba por exir la almiella*, SMill 343, with *lo que es por venir*, Alix 1792, and *al que es por nascer*, Cron 513b17. The sense of the *por*-infinitive with *estar* is not entirely consistent, however, as is seen by comparing *querrie mas seyer muerto o estar por nascer*, Alix 1396, and *estaua aun por descabesçar*, Cron 441a24, with *estauan todos por perder se*, Cron 76a10. In the *Crónica* occur two cases with no indication of *immediate futurity*: *estauan y los cuerpos de los omnes muertos por soterrar*, Cron 133b35, and *tanto tiempo estido daquela guisa por enterrar*, Cron 674b21. In these instances, the *por*-infinitive indicates a *falta de realización* as well as a shade of *purpose*.

#### **fincar.**

*Fincar* is unmentioned by Menéndez Pidal as a member of this group, because there are evidently no examples available in the *Cid*. The *Crónica* offers, however, several well defined instances of the same type of construction as that discussed above under *estar*. The difference between *estar* and *fincar* was merely that *fincar* in general indicated greater duration of time than *estar* when used with the *por*-infinitive (*to remain, to be yet to do*).

. . . quel no finco sino muy poco por cercar Cron 103b41  
 las cosas que fincauan por quemar Cron 125a39  
 el tiempo que fincaua por passar Cron 131a4  
 finco este pleyto por judgar Cron 518b19  
 fincaua el rey don Alfonso por casar Cron 553a5  
 finco donna Dulçe donzella por casar Cron 652a3

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, p. 233.



In the last citation above, the *por*-infinitive depends on the noun acting as predicate rather than on the verb *finco*, thus making an entity of the phrase *donzella por casar* (*marriageable girl*). It also occurs in *era estonces donzella por casar*, Cron 170b21.

**yazer.**

In the one instance with *yazer*, the *por*-infinitive again indicates the near accomplishment of the action.

yazie por morirse ya Cron 717b13

**ser.**

Diez considers *ser* to indicate *possibility* when used with *por*-infinitive, as opposed to the sense of *estar por*, cited above as meaning *to be on the point of*.<sup>1</sup> This is seen in the sentences below, where the futurity is not "precised." The underlying sense of purpose is frequently to be felt also. The *Alixandre* and the *Crónica* yield practically all the available examples.

mas valdrie la cosa que fues por enpeçar Alix 714

valdrieles mucho mas que fuesen por naçer Alix 753

eran por llegar Alix 1416

lo que es por venir Alix 1792; Cron 95a51

valdria mas que fues muerto o fues por naçer Alix 71, 2363

Tu fuyes de las cosas fechas e demandas las que son por fazer  
Cron 40a18

o si eran aun por conquerir Cron 66b10

Por casar son uuestras fijas Cid 1650

era aun por casar Cron 469b24

era estonces donzella por casar Cron 710b21

In the last citation above, *por casar* depends rather on *donzella* than on *era* (see *finçar* above).

#### THE INDEPENDENT POR-INFINITIVE

55. This independent construction of the *por*-infinitive probably grew out of the frequent use of *por* with *auer* and *ser* to indicate the possible future accomplishment of an action, as discussed in the last section (e.g. *lo que es por venir*, Alix

<sup>1</sup> Gram. III, p. 223.

1792; *tres [días] an por troçir*, Cid 307). Exactly the same type of *futurity* is found in the so-called *independent por*-infinitive as in that dependent on *ser*. The immediacy of the future action, as expressed by *estar*, *yazer* and the like, is almost never implied in the independent *por*-infinitive, rather the indefinite futurity usual in the *ser* locutions. In fact, sometimes the very same expressions are found, with or without *ser*. A good illustration of this point is at hand in *SMill* 477 (*villas* understood):

Granadas e menudas, por poblar e pobladas  
 Fueron en dar en esto todas pronunçiadas

In this instance, *por poblar e pobladas* evidently acts as the subject of *fueron*, while in *SMill* 464 the same *por*-infinitive depends on *eran*:

Las que por poblar eran tan bien com las pobladas

The *por*-infinitives occurring with and without auxiliary are *por casar*, *por venir*, *por poblar* and *por pagar*. It will be remarked as one of the most important facts in this connection that most often within one and the same phrase a contrast will be made between the past and the future by means of the past participle and the *por*-infinitive: *por casar e casado*, *por domar e domado*, *por poblar e poblado*.

*Por casar* is noted as follows:

era cosa desapuesta . . . ueuir desordenado et por casar *Cron*  
 718a37

Darte yo casamiento, muger qual tu quisieres,  
 por casar o casada *Aliz* 370  
 por casar e casados *SMill* 204

In three cases *por domar* is noted in this independent use:

yentes brauas et por domar *Cron* 159a40  
 las aues e las bestias por domar e domadas *Aliz* 639  
 las bestias por domar e domadas *Sig* 9

The first citation below is particularly interesting by reason of the contrast in tenses which it presents, *por venir* standing for the future of *ser* (later *por venir* is used as a single word to mean the *future*):

metran toda su fuerça en dios bendezir,  
 al que fue et al que es, al que por vénir Aliz 2315  
 los por venir Sac 269

A rare example of *por destenprar* occurs in Aliz 1521:

vnas por destenprar, otras destenpradas

The most striking example of the *independent por*-infinitive occurs at the beginning of a sentence in Cron 487a45, where even without *estar* the future action of the infinitive is marked as immediate (cf. first paragraph, this section).

. . . fasta que ouieron crebantado el muro de la çibdad. Et  
 ellos por entrarla, llegaron los moros . . .

The special use of this *independent por*-infinitive in *por andar* deserves attention. It is limited to the *Crónica*, but occurs frequently in this text. Always found in connection with the name of a month, it serves to indicate the number of days remaining in that month (*Et fue esto dos dias ante de las calendas de setiembre, esto es, dos dias por andar del mes de agosto*, Cron 667b45).

cinco dias por andar del mes de junio Cron 202a33  
 catorze dias por andar del mes de ochubre Cron 214b4  
 ocho dias por andar de junio Cron 108b4  
 diez dias por andar del mes de nouiembre Cron 163a53  
 ocho dias por andar de março Cron 108b10  
 ocho dias por andar del mes de deziembre Cron 108b16  
 dos dias por andar del mes de ochubre Cron 163a46  
 XV dias por andar del mes de julio Cron 681b22  
 XII dias por andar del mes de yunno Cron 694b43  
 dos dias por andar de março Cron 317a2  
 XV dias por andar del mes de deziembre Cron 540a25  
 ocho dias por andar del mes de Março Cron 545b7  
 X dias por andar del mes de setiembre Cron 708a22

#### THE *POR*-INFINITIVE INDICATES CAUSE

56. The *por*-infinitive indicating the *cause* of an action is generally found to depend on a whole clause rather than on a

single verb, since the *por*-infinitive takes the place of a subordinate clause having an inflected verb form. Certain verbs do, however, lend themselves most readily to the *causal* relation in the dependent infinitive (e.g. *se preciauan por alañar*, Cron 431b31, 520b5). This construction is shown to be frequent in the Portuguese examined by Otto, though *por* in other infinitive constructions is not as often employed, nor its uses as varied, in the Portuguese of Camões as in the Spanish of Berceo. It will be remembered that *por* is the only preposition of the *por-pora-para* group that can indicate *cause*, and that these others only fulfil the functions of *goal* and *purpose*. The most important of the texts in verse offer examples of this use, but a considerable majority of instances come from the *Crónica*, where the *causal por* may be said to be one of the regular constructions. The problem of definitively judging examples is at times encountered here because of the possibility of taking a given *por*-infinitive as expressing either *purpose* or *cause* without doing violence to the context in either case. It becomes simple, however, when the *causal por*-infinitive has a subject, as in *por seer oy la cibdat . . . tan grand*, Cron 42b28. At times there is remarked an approach to the subject-infinitive relation, with slight emphasis on the *causal* element: *me pesa por errar tan mal . . . mis vassallos*, Cron 612b37.

En la ondra que él ha nos seremos abiltados;  
por tan biltadamientre vençer reyes del campo *Cid* 1863

abrá y ondra e creçrá en onor,  
por consagrar con iffantes de Carrión *Cid* 1907

sobre todos i es el rey don Alfons  
por querer el derecho e ningún tuerto non *Cid* 3549

touo se por errado por tal omne como este seer tan apartado  
*SDom* 114

que si se leuantasse, que serie mal maiado,  
o por escarmentar otros seria descabeçado *SDom* 711

quien vio nunca rrencuras tan dobladas  
por todas nuestras cosas seyer tan anebladas *Aliz* 738

grant presçio nos acaesçe por valer a tan grand enemiga *Aliz*  
1710

et del danno que uino en ella por partir los regnos *Cron* 4b13

por tres cosas fueron los romanos sennores de toda la tierra:  
la primera por saber, la segunda por seer bien acabdellados,  
la tercera por suffrencia *Cron* 18b7

loado por mantener bien la fe *Cron* 158b46

era aquel puerto tenido por el meior de toda Affrica, por estar y  
nauios en todo tiempo *Cron* 48b19

non tienes que la fe y el omenaie que tu quebrantest que te  
terna danno alli por non te querer Dios ayudar *Cron* 40b45

assi auie grant arteria con ella por saber guisar de fazer mal  
*Cron* 140b22

. . . que pierdan el nuestro amor por non querer seer cristianos  
*Cron* 186a9

. . . alçado por rey et non por emperador por se no egualar a  
su padre *Cron* 195b50

cayera muchas uezes por tremer la tierra *Cron* 203a37

alçosse con toda Affrica por cuidar que la podrie auer por suya  
*Cron* 204a45

por cuidar que . . . *Cron* 110a12, 207b33

. . . nin valiese menos por andar en agenos desconuenientes  
ayuntamientos de mugeres *Cron* 735b2

esto non era por al si non por seer creyda de la palabra de la  
grand sibilla *Cron* 260a35

sennor, por non yr contigo los de Cordoua non des nada por  
ende *Cron* 456a48

por que . . . non cayesse en algun periglo por non seer y su  
pastor *Cron* 544a32

aprendemos que por tu matar aquestos sabios, otros aura y  
luego *Cron* 124a44

ouo el amor de Gayo por saber bien guiar las carretas *Cron*  
130b20

## THE POR-INFINITIVE INDICATES MEANS

57. Diez recognizes this use of the Romance infinitive with prepositions derived from *per*.<sup>1</sup> He gives examples for the French and Italian, but none for the Spanish. Meyer-Lübke mentions the construction as a restricted use of Latin *per-instrumental*,<sup>2</sup> nor does he specially cite any instances for Spanish. There was evidently a fusion of functions in Spanish so that the *por*-infinitive, not originally *per*, took on this *per-instrumental* use, while *para*, really from *per*, lost it. The construction is so closely allied to the more frequent *causal por*-infinitive that it is only natural for *por* to have occasionally assumed an *instrumental* force. In fact, the rendition of a given *de-* or *por*-infinitive with *instrumental* rather than *causal* value is necessitated largely by the use of special verbs or phrases in the context (e.g. *ganar* used in three of the eight cases below).

sy omne non gana prez por dezir o por fer *Alix* 71

sy non ganare presçio por ganar o por fer . . . *Alix* 753

era la gent movida Por veer esti Lazaro dado de muert a vida  
*Mil* 216

puso en so coraçon que de quanto y pudiese ganar por amor o  
por abenencia, que lo no leuasse por guerras nin lides nin  
muertes ni por esparzer sangre *Cron* 69b40

en fincar esta lid por prometer o por dar, tengo yo que esto  
serie lo meior *Cron* 392b9

en ganar nos treguas de los moros por pecharles algo *Cron*  
392b32

non se deue uencer nin por miedo . . . nin por dar nin prometer  
*Cron* 419b13

ca por llorar tu mucho por tus fijos non los podras nunca  
cobrar por ende *Cron* 442a38

## THE POR-INFINITIVE HAS A CONCESSIVE SENSE

58. No mention of this use of the *por*-infinitive is found in Diez, Meyer-Lübke or Menéndez Pidal, yet it is a very real sense in the few instances from the *Crónica* noted below. In two of the three citations, *aun* will be noted in the phrase *aun*

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* IV, p. 177.

<sup>2</sup> *Gram.* III, p. 524.

*por seer uençudos*, without doubt considerably enforcing the idea of *concession* that could be read into the *por*-infinitive.

Ca esto que uos queredes aun por seer uençudos, lo que Dios no quiera, podedes lo fazer en el cabo *Cron* 73b20

sera cosa guisada de no caer uos en culpa faziendo como deuedes, mas esperar perdon et gualardon aun por seer uençudos  
*Cron* 74a20

era la mas noble et mas onrrada uilla de tiempo antigo por seer pequenna mas que otra cibdad que fuesse en toda Asia  
*Cron* 324a10

### THE INFINITIVE WITH POR

59. The origin of the *pora*-infinitive was evidently in the frequent use of *por* and *a* together, *por* alone not being definite enough to indicate the intended relation between the infinitive and the verb or clause on which it depended. The function of *a* was predominantly *goal*, while that of *por* was *purpose*. If the two were put together there was effected a very useful combination which fitted more accurately into the sense of numerous phrases than either preposition alone. The combination was not limited to taking the infinitive, but was allowed to govern a direct or indirect object. Menéndez Pidal<sup>1</sup> states it thus: "En vez de *por* para expresar el fin, se usa *pora* cuando es necessaria la preposición *a* que rija un complemento: *pora myo Çid e alos sos a manos los tomar*, *Cid* 701." With *a* taking an indirect object, *pora* appears in *pora cristianos la dar*, *Cid* 1191, 892, 1616. In such cases, the separation into *por a* is quite evident. It was, in general of course, a matter of indifference to the scribes whether the two words were written *pora* or *por a*. As the use of the prepositions together increased, they came to be considered as a unit, and were employed where *a* no longer indicated the object relation mentioned by Menéndez Pidal above (*pora con ellos casar*, *Cid* 1882, 3449). The fact that it was a progressive construction is indicated by a comparison of the use of *pora*-infinitives in the

<sup>1</sup> *Cid*, § 161, 5.

*Cid* with those in the *Crónica*. The number of examples from the *Cid* is, indeed, almost negligible, while in the *Crónica* are found the great majority of the instances cited below. The *pora*-infinitive was permitted by the authors of the *Crónica* to usurp no small part of the legitimate territory of the construction with *por*. It could not, of course, encroach on those uses of *por* that had nothing to do with the original concept of *purpose* generally expressed by *por*. Thus the senses of *por* including *cause*, *means*, *concession*, etc. stood firm. As a rule, there is a notable difference between *por* and *pora* even when similarly governed, the ideas of *suitable to*, *such as to* (expressing a *characteristic*), being much more current in the *pora*-infinitive (see particularly its use with adjectives and nouns: *semeiaua . . . ninno aun pora gouernar el regno*, Cron 709a38; *tiempo pora casar*, Cron 601a43). Though rarely met in our texts outside of the *Crónica*, and not offering so varied a field as *por*, yet *pora* is a successful rival of *por* in its most common uses. It even surpasses *por* in one field, i.e. with adjectives such as *acucioso*, *bueno* and *conuiniente* (*sotil . . . pora aprender toda arte*, Cron 138a18; *buenas pora ganar . . . tierra*, Cron 22a3).

#### THE PORA-INFINITIVE WITH NOUNS

60. As was also true of *por*, the class of *pora*-infinitives clearly dependent on nouns is small in comparison with other infinitive constructions with *pora*. It is limited to about five nouns, the only frequent one of which is *logar*. In these examples, the difference can be felt between the *pora*-construction and that with *por* in the same places (e.g. with *tiempo* in *Non es agora tiempo por en naves entrar*, Soria 159; *non son en tiempo pora casar*, Cron 601a43; it is not time now to enter boats; they are not at a time suitable for marrying).

**bestia.**

non fincara ya en la villa bestia pora caualgar Cron 586a29

**edat.**

quando la ninna fuesse de edat pora casar Cron 33a41



**logar.**

un logar pora lidiar *Cron* 148a15  
 no era Roma logar pora seer desamparada *Cron* ...  
 alli era lugar pora dezirse . . . *Cron* 625b22  
 logares pora lidiar *Cron* 695b10

**ninno.**

semeiaua . . . ninno aun pora gouernar el regno *Cron* 709a38

## THE PORA-INFINITIVE WITH ADJECTIVES

61. With the exception of a few sporadic occurrences in the *Alizandre* and a doubtful one in the *Cid* (*buenos e valientes pora mio Cid huyar*, *Cid* 892, where the *a* of *pora* may well be the personal accusative sign), available instances of *pora*-infinitive with adjectives all come from the *Crónica*. Poetry in general affected the *por*-construction. The total number of adjectives with *pora* is half again greater than with *por*, showing that at least the authors of the *Crónica* considered *pora* more appropriate for such use than *por*. It is also seen that they are more varied in sense, and are more generally representative of the whole group of adjectives than they were with *por* (*pora*: *acucioso*, *liuiano*, *noble*, *sabio*, *sano*, *sotil*, *tierno*, etc.; *por*: *tan*, *tal*, *sabroso*, *grande*, etc.). This is not surprising in view of the fact that the adjective regularly expresses a *characteristic*, and this is one of the uses most normal to the *pora*-infinitive as well (see § 59 above). The only individual adjectives found with both prepositions are *bueno*, *firme*, and *presto* (*pora morir e pora uencer firme estaua el*, *Cron* 702a8; *Ellos por alargarse, los otros por redrarlos, estauan todos firmes*, *Alix* 2054; *serien mas prestos pora en armas entrar*, *Alix* 1308; *estaua presto por los guardar sanos*, *Cron* 134a4).

*Adjectives.***acucioso.**

acucioso pora regebir huespedes *Cron* 277a29  
 acuciosa pora enderençar el regno *Cron* 492a42

**bueno** (also takes infinitive constructions with *de*, *por* and *para*).

eran buenos pora ganar con ellos *Cron* 437b14

eran buenas pora ganar e defender tierra *Cron* 22a3

**conuiniente.**

logar conuiniente pora enxerir aqui la estoria del regno de  
Portogal *Cron* 650a51

**liuiano** (noted also with *de*-infinitive).

pora trayer liuianas *Aliz* 970

**noble.**

omne muy noble pora gouernar ell imperio *Cron* 172a45

fue muy noble de spirito pora dezir las cosas *Cron* 277a27

**presto** (the most frequent adjective taking the infinitive in  
the *por-pora-para* group).

serien mas prestos pora en armas entrar *Aliz* 1308

presto era el otro pora luego lo conplir *Aliz* 1977

parosse guisado et presto pora entrar en su camino *Cron* 530a29

estaua el presto pora fazer su confession *Cron* 662a44

**sabio.**

omne muy sabio pora gouernar ell imperio *Cron* 172a13

**sano.**

Son las aguas muy sanas por a bestias abeurar *Aliz* 1447

**seguro** (noted also with *de*-infinitive).

buen puerto de mar et seguro pora estar y naues *Cron* 287a34

**sesudo.**

pora traer su fazienda bien, era muy sesudo *Cron* 629b20

**sotil.**

Era muy sotil . . . pora aprender toda arte *Cron* 138a18

**tarde.**

tarde es ya este tiempo pora perdonar *Cron* 136a40

**tierno.**

ell rey maguer que aun tierno pora seer fuerte . . . *Cron*  
710b38

**valiente (u-).**

buenos e valientes pora mio Çid huyar *Cid* 892  
 et era mas ualiente que los mancebos pora lidiar *Cron* 132a2

**uieio.**

deuiera seer alçado por emperador, ca ell era uieio pora conseiar  
*Cron* 132a2

*Participles.*

Only about half as many past participles take the *pora*-infinitive as are noted with the *por*-infinitive. Probably this is due at least in part to the fact that past participles usually had a stronger verbal than adjectival force, and verbs in general affected the *por*-infinitive more often than that with *pora*. The usual prepositional functions for *a*, *por*, *pora*, *para* of *purpose* and *goal* are evident in the examples cited below (*eran dados pora disputar*, *Cron* 190a6; *uio los castellanos movidos pora uencerse*, *Cron* 416a10). As with *por*, the verbs particularly well represented here are those indicating some sort of *preparedness* (*apareiado*, *aparellado*, *guarnido*, *guisado*, etc.), and those expressing *inclination*, *desire* and related emotions (*abiuido*, *dado*, *denodado*, *desesperado*, etc.).

**adobado.**

Ellos son adobados pora cumplir todo lo so *Cid* 3489

**amolado.**

todos por a feryr los estauan amolados *Aliz* 956

**ap(p)areiado** (also takes infinitives with *por* and *de*).

apareiado pora morir *Cron* 277a37

apareiado pora foyr *Cron* 379b33

prestos et apareiados pora venir *Cron* 607b20

**aparellado** (see *apareiado* above).

todos por a servirte somos aparellados *Aliz* 1648

**armado.**

armados pora ayudar el Çid *Cron* 615a27

**abiuido** (also takes the infinitive with *por* and *en*).

fueron por a lidiar todos mas abiuidos *Aliz* 2031

**dado.**

The *a* component of *pora* can be clearly felt in the citation below (cf. English *given to disputing*):

eran dados pora disputar *Cron* 190a6

**denodado** (also used with *por*-infinitive).

por a lidiar la villa fue muy mas denodado *Aliz* 1108

eran por a ferir todos tan denodados *Aliz* 2028

**desesperado** (takes *de*-infinitive also). In this instance the *pora*-infinitive expresses *degrees* rather than the usual *purpose*:

eran ya desesperados pora morir *Cron* 30b15

**guarnido.**

estaua mui bien guarnido . . . pora salir *Cron* 564a3

**guisado** (used with *de*- and *por*-infinitives as well).

guisado pora recebir la su fe *Cron* 103a23

no estauan apercebudos ni guisados pora deffenderse darmas  
*Cron* 49b2

muy guisadas . . . pora deffender los usos *Cron* 103b30

fueron guisados pora yr contra Vologeso *Cron* 153a47

omnes darmas guisados pora lidiar *Cron* 220a22

**mouido** (used also with the *por*-infinitive).

era pora tornarse toda la gente mouida *Aliz* 410

uio los castellanos mouidos pora uencerse *Cron* 416a10

mouido pora yr en aquella cruzada *Cron* 544a3

**parado.**

somos parados pora morir *Cron* 701b52

**soffrido** (takes also the infinitive with *en*).

non era pacient nin soffrido pora oyr las razones *Cron* 387b24

THE *PORA*-INFINITIVE WITH INTRANSITIVE VERBS OF MOTION

62. This group is numerically much weaker than the corresponding group with *por*-infinitive both in verbs and in individual examples. As a class, although the verbs of motion are not found as often with the *pora*- as with the *por*-construction, when

so used the sense is more *precised* than with *por*. It is a notable fact that all but one of the examples cited below come from the *Crónica*, and the one exception is *yva pora senbrar*, Alix 2528. This is particularly interesting in view of the fact that *pora* was most fitting for use with verbs of motion because of its indication of *goal* (its *-a* indicating direction *toward* something) while *por* could only express *purpose* with them. *Pora*-constructions developed, however, late in our period, thus largely explaining the favor enjoyed by them in the *Crónica* and their apparent lack of favor elsewhere.

Numerous instances of the *pora*-infinitive are found depending on a clause of *goal*, the main verb of which is a verb of motion. As indicated under the *por*-infinitive above (§ 53), such cases closely resemble the regular construction with these verbs:

entraran en ella pora defenderla *Cron* 365a27

descendiendo contra mar . . . pora fazer dalli caualgadas et  
guerrear la tierra *Cron* 534b45

llegaron alli . . . pora yrse con el *Cron* 524a47

fuesse contra Salamanca pora saber que fazie el rey *Cron* 373a19

#### **caualgar.**

The *a*-infinitive is also noted with *caualgar*.

Los infantes caualgaron estonces pora yr fazer aquello *Cron* 438a39

el caualgo luego et sus fijos pora yrse pora alla *Cron* 516b12

caualgo pora uenirse a la frontera *Cron* 541b4

#### **contender.**

Like other verbs of *striving* and *seeking* (*trabaiarse*, *buscar*, etc.) *contender* considerably varies its infinitive relations (i.e. with *de*, *por* and *en* as well as with *pora*).

comenzaron luego a contender pora auer la guardia del rey  
ninno *Cron* 709b5

#### **enderesçar (-nç-).**

The infinitives with *por* and *a* also occur.

enderesçaron pora yr a las vistas *Cron* 600a50

enderesçaron pora yr a las vistas *Cron* 600b9

enderenço pora yr a Valencia *Cron* 551b29

**yr.**

The combination of *goal* and *purpose* in the *pora*-infinitive is well evidenced in the examples of this verb. The pure infinitive and that with *a*, *por* and *para* are likewise found with *yr*. The *pora*-infinitive may depend on an *yr*-clause of *goal* rather than on *yr* alone (*yuan ellos a su palacio pora fablar con ell*, Cron 463a38; and *Cron* 339b19, 465b47, 704a3.

fue otra uez pora lidiar con ellos *Cron* 28a23

fue derechamientre pora destroyr Galizia *Cron* 29a54

. . . que fuessen todos con la condessa pora prouar sil podrien  
sacar *Cron* 420b18

ellos yendo ya pora ayudarlos *Cron* 440a4

**mouer.**

As an intransitive, *mouer* also takes the infinitive pure and with *a*. The transitive *mouer* takes the pure and *a*-infinitives, the reflexive those with *a* and *pora*.

quiso mouer pora yr contra Espanna *Cron* 101b8

**passar.**

Infinitive constructions also occur with *a* and without preposition.

quisieron passar pora andalla por ueer si era aun mejor que  
aquella *Cron* 217a4

**sal(l)ir.**

The pure, *a*- and *pora*-infinitive constructions occur with this verb.

salieron los de dentro pora lidiar con ellos *Cron* 463b4

salio . . . pora yr degollar el carnero *Cron* 504a51

sallio . . . pora confirmar el pleito con el *Cron* 587b34

. . . que seliessen pora yr a la batalla *Cron* 689a40

**tornar.**

The pure, *a*-, *de*-, *pora*- and *en*-infinitives are also noted with *tornar* as an intransitive verb; the *a*-, *de*- and *para*-infinitives with *tornar* as a reflexive; the *a*-infinitive with *tornar* only as a transitive. No iteration appears in *tornar* in this instance:

torno pora acorrer a los suyos *Cron* 558a17

**uenir.**

This verb is not found as frequently with *pora*- as with *por*-infinitive. Instances of the *pora*-construction with *uenir* are taken from the *Crónica* only, while a large part of those having *por* come from the *Cid*, etc. The infinitive pure, as well as with *de*, *a* and *por*, is also noted with *uenir*. Cases of dependence on *goal* clauses with *uenir*: *Cron* 400a44, 443b51, 516b34, 527b13, 693b18.

uinieron *pora* auer batalla con ell, et matarle o echarle de la tierra *Cron* 339b39

uinieron *pora* acorrer a los del castiello *Cron* 406b49

uinie . . . *pora* correrle la tierra *Cron* 415b42, 449b5

**THE PORA-INFINITIVE WITH REFLEXIVE VERBS**

63. Approximately the same number of reflexive verbs take *pora* as *por* with the infinitive, though in neither class is the number of examples for each verb very large. In this section as in the last, all except one of the citations are from the *Crónica* (*mouios pora lidiar toda la criazon*, Alix 209). But while the *Crónica* particularly affects *pora* with the infinitive, it does not at all neglect *por*. At least half of the instances with *por*-infinitive come from this prose text. In both the *por*- and *pora*-groups are noted *ayuntarse*, *guisarse* and *levantarse*, *guisarse* being used the most frequently (*guisosse por yr a ueerla*, *Cron* 38b19; *levantosse por yr su uia*, *Cron* 146a36; for corresponding *pora*-constructions, see individual verbs below). A greater proportion of reflexives implying motion, hence naturally favoring the *goal* of *a* and *pora*, is found in this group than in the corresponding *por*-group (e.g. *ayuntarse*, *esforçarse*, *levantarse*, *mouerse* and *partirse* below).

**aguisarse.**

No other infinitive uses occur with the reflexive form of this verb, but as a transitive *aguisar* takes the *por*-infinitive also. The simple *guisarse* is noted frequently with *por*-, *pora*- and *para*-constructions.

aguisosse *pora* yr a so hermano *Cron* 23a34

**ayuntarse.**

*Ayuntarse* also takes the *a-* and *por-*infinitives.

se ayuntaran . . . pora amparar el castiello *Cron* 287b7

**esforçarse.**

*De*, *a* and *pora* are noted with the infinitive in *esforçarse* locutions.

non dexauan de esforçarse pora sobir por las pennas a arriba  
*Cron* 71a8

**guisarse.**

*De*, *por* and *para* are found in other infinitive uses of *guisarse*.

guissosse pora yr a Carthago *Cron* 25b15, 153a37, 154a3

guissosse pora lidiar *Cron* 159a22

estauan y guisados pora guardar las entradas de Affrica *Cron* 53a17

en guisando se pora alçar otra uez *Cron* 204b27

se guiso pora yrle ganar *Cron* 245a38

**leuantarse.**

*Leuantarse* also takes the pure infinitive, as well as that with *de*, *a* and *por*.

se non osarien alçar nin leuantar pora correrle la tierra *Cron*  
644a19

**mouerse.**

The *a-*infinitive also occurs with *mouerse*.

mouiosse . . . pora yr lidiar con ell *Cron* 245a22

mouios pora lidiar toda la criazon *Aliz* 209

**pararse.**

As a transitive, *parar* is used once with the *para-*infinitive.

non auien con quien se parar pora defenderse *Cron* 365a35

**partirse.**

It is a conspicuous fact that no other infinitive construction of *partir* is noted in these texts, whether as an intransitive or as a reflexive verb, except the *de* of *separation*.

partieron se luego pora yr robar las tierras de Italia *Cron* 230a40



**tornarse** (*Goal* clauses occur in *Cron* 251a46, 354a18. *De*, *a* and *para* also occur in infinitive constructions of *tornarse*).  
 ouo sabor de tornarse pora ueer su tierra *Cron* 546a48

#### THE PORA-INFINITIVE WITH TRANSITIVE VERBS

64. This group is not as strong as the corresponding *por*-group. *Aguisar* and *enbiar* occur both with *por*- and with *pora*-infinitives (e.g. *como aguisarie poyo . . . por veyer todo el mundo*, *Alix* 2460; *pora seyer omne bueno tu lo as aguisado*, *Alix* 50). Of the verbs taking the *pora*-construction, those with which the *purpose*-infinitive may be said to approximate the object-infinitive are *aguisar*, *aplazar*, *buscar* and *ordenar* (*el mandauan buscar pora matallo*, *Cron* 128b8); with *dar* and *tener* the *pora*-infinitive has an almost purely *purpose* function, while with *enbiar* the element of *goal* predominates (for examples, see the individual verb below).

It is evident that instances of the infinitive depending on transitive verbs (with an object present) easily become ordinary cases of clausal dependence, since the modifiers of the transitive verb may minimize the closeness of relation between it and the infinitive: *enuiaron le a Espanna, sennaladamientre pora conquistar e ganar Camora*, *Cron* 29b31.

#### **aguisar.**

*Por*-infinitive also occurs with *aguisar* as a transitive.

*pora seyer omne bueno tu lo as aguisado* *Alix* 50

#### **aplazar.**

*aplazolos pora ser y aquel dia pora consagrar la elesia de sant Yague* *Cron* 381a41

#### **buscar.**

The *de*-infinitive object is also found with *buscar*. The construction with *pora* substitutes the element of *purpose* for the almost purely object function of the *relative de*-infinitive (*Essos li buscaron de echarlo a mal*, *Duelo* 70).

*el mandauan buscar pora matallo* *Cron* 128b8

**dar.**

For a detailed discussion of a very similar construction with *dar*, see § 44, dealing with the *a*-infinitive (*dyol mucho a ganar*, Alix 981). The *de*-infinitive also occurs with *dar* (*diol . . . de comer*, Cron 523b34).

les dieron aquel pora justiciar Cron 29a43  
so tal postura quel diesse el cuerpo . . . pora leuar a Leon  
Cron 490b16

**enbiar.**

The pure, *a*- and *por*-infinitives are also noted with *enbiar*.

. . . quel enbiassen ballesteros et peones pora conbater Valencia Cron 576a22  
enbio tres omnes buenos . . . pora confirmar el pleito Cron 586b40

**guisar.**

The pure infinitive also occurs with the transitive *guisar*; *de*, *por*, *pora* and *para* with *guisarse*.

guiso sus huestes pora yr Cron 201a5

**parar.**

*Para*-infinitive also occurs with *parar* as a transitive verb; *a* and *pora* with *pararse*.

las azes que auien paradas pora lidiar Cron 221b33

**tener.**

*Pora* and *para* are found in practically equivalent infinitive uses with *tener* (*Allen mar tenie oio para pasar*, Cron 770b27).

no tenie ninguna cosa pora dexar de comer Cron 130b52  
Teniela el buen omne non pora cavalgar,  
Mas pora los mezquinos lenna acarrear SMill 272

# THE PORA-INFINITIVE WITH AUER, SER, ETC.

**auer.**

65. Under *auer* but few instances of the *pora*-infinitive can be cited, but under *ser* cases are by no means so scarce. It will be recalled that the *por*-infinitive with *ser* and *auer* expressed

a *lack of realization* of the action of the infinitive (§ 54), and that the related expression of immediate *futurity* also made itself felt. For the *pora*-infinitive no such conditions are evidenced. There is a much stronger element of *purpose* expressed in *pora*, and a much lesser degree of *futurity* and *lack of realization*. In *Cron* 104b17 is to be remarked the closest approximation of the *pora*- to the *por*-infinitive: *ouieron siempre los de Roma pora uencer*. Even here *pora uencer* expresses little more of *futurity* than would the *a*-infinitive, if so used. *Purpose* is decidedly evident in the other three instances of *auer* with *pora*-infinitive.

todos auien vn cuer pora trayer las manos *Alix* 1028

Avien pora servirla meior devoçion *Mil* 618

Avia pora mi, avia pora dar *Mil* 760

### **finçar.**

Along with *auer* and *ser* taking the *por*-infinitive was mentioned *finçar* fulfilling a similar function (i.e. that of expressing *futurity* or *lack of realization*; cf. § 54). *Finçar* with *pora*-infinitive occurs but twice, and then rather with a *purpose* sense than that noted for the *por*-infinitive:

pora verter su agua fincoli el forado *Mil* 213

assi que non finque aqui ninguno sinon dos peones pora guardar la puerta *Cron* 528a17

**menguar** (no other infinitive uses noted).

*Purpose* constructions are normal with this type of verb (cf. modern *me falta dinero para viajar*).

Mas pora fer tal pasta menguabalis farina *Mil* 274

### **ser.**

A slightly different situation is to be remarked in *ser* with the *pora*-infinitive. This construction has more of the *futurity* of the *por*-infinitive, as well as a sense that is best rendered into English by *fit to*, *able to*, *of such a kind as to* (*los necios que no eran pora salir*, *Cron* 77a51). These delicate *nuances* are derived from the original *a*-function of *goal*, with added force

given by the *por*-element of *purpose* in *pora*. A closer approximation than usual of the *futurity* so common in *auer* and *ser* with *por*-infinitive is evident in *el día que fino era aun pora uenir*, Cron 708a28.

fueron pora seruirle todos *Aliz* 11  
 nin era por a fuyr nin era por a tornar *Aliz* 1397  
 Non serie por a asmar la cuenta de las gentes *Aliz* 1512  
 mataron sos padres . . . e todos los que no eran pora ayudar  
 se darmas *Cron* 17a24  
 no era pora guerra ni pora gouernar la tierra *Cron* 132b52  
 no era ya pora gouernar bien ell imperio *Cron* 178a46  
 no eran pora seruir sennor *Cron* 180a29  
 se uio tan maltrecho de la enfermedat que no era ya pora andar  
 en guerras *Cron* 213a1  
 non son pora casar con ellas *Cron* 601a44  
 fasta que fuesse pora mantener regno *Cron* 644a34  
 si nos dotra manera non punnamos del vengar, non somos pora  
 paresçer antel *Cron* 610a46

#### THE PORA-INFINITIVE DEPENDS ON A CLAUSE

66. In § 53 were discussed in detail various types of the *por*-infinitive depending on a clause as a whole instead of on a single verb. The same facts are in general true for the *pora*-infinitive as for that with *por*. A not infrequent type is *llegaron alli a Sant Pedro a ell aquel día cient et quinze caualleros pora yrse con el*, Cron 524a47, where the *goal* of the arriving being already mentioned, the *pora*-infinitive loses the prime function it has with verbs of motion such as *llegar* (e.g. *quiso mouer pora yr contra Espanna*, Cron 101b8). The close dependence of the *pora*-infinitive on the main verb is evident in *ellos yendo ya pora ayudarlos*, Cron 440a4, as against the very loose construction of *Despues desto un día fuesse el rey Almemon pora su huerta con grand companna de moros pora auer y su solaz*, Cron 504a19. Striking illustration of the parallelism of *pora* with the infinitive and *pora* with a noun (indicating the *goal* of the action) is found in the citation above and in: *tornosse pora*

*Italia pora predicar*, Cron 251a46; *tornose pora Germania pora guisarse*, Cron 354a18. The separate and the collective force of the component parts of *pora* is to be remarked in *fuesse pora Carmona et a Sevilla pora conquerirlas*, Cron 465b47.

Methieronse ennas naves pora Acre passar *Mil* 588

socauaron el muro pora ellos plegar *Aliz* 213

dio con ella en Asia pora aprender ventura *Aliz* 255

leuataronse contra las otras yentes uezinaz pora lidiar con ellas e conquerirlas *Cron* 219a27

allegaronse todos en uno pora correr la tierra, *Cron* 335b32

. . . quel ayudassen contra Abdalla pora darle batalla *Cron* 338b18

entraran en ella pora defenderla *Cron* 365a27

alçarase y pora cobrar el regno *Cron* 389b42

entro en aquel logar . . . pora crebantar el su monumento *Cron* 448b47

uiniera en Santa Maria pora saluar el mundo *Cron* 516b34

Also: *Cron* 347b3, 400a44, 443b51, 448b47, 463a38, 527b13, 704a3.

#### THE INFINITIVE WITH PARA

67. In *para*<sup>1</sup> Old Spanish possessed a derivative of *per ad* very similar to *pora*, the much more frequent derivative of *pro ad* (compare with *pora*- and *para*-uses the archaic and illiterate English *for to* with infinitive, as in Luke VII, 25: *What went ye out for to see?*). From the texts covered by this study, a comparison between the two can hardly be made, especially in the matter of frequency, so far overshadowed was *para* by *pora*. As shown in the last few sections, *pora* was a successful rival of *por* in the favor of the authors of the *Crónica* for the indication of *goal* and *purpose*. But *para* did not rival *pora*, much less *por*, in this or any other of our texts. Per Abbat uses *para* only once, and then in place of *pora*:<sup>2</sup> *para Calatayuth quanto puede se va*, Cid 775. The *Alixandre* offers a few sporadic instances of *para*-infinitive, but the *Crónica* again comes to the rescue with at least enough evidence to show increasing popular

<sup>1</sup> Cornu, *Romania* X, p. 94, and Hanssen, *Gram.*, p. 311.

<sup>2</sup> Menéndez Pidal, *Cid* II, *para*.

favor for the *para*-construction. It is true that the same classes of verbs are noted with *para* as with *pora*, but instead of finding well-rounded and representative groups, only sporadic and occasional instances are at hand. The one group that might be expected to be strong, even with *para*, is that of the intransitive verbs of motion, but even here there are no regular examples of the construction at hand. Among the reflexives, there are only three verbs noted with *para*-infinitive: *apartarse*, *guisarse* and *tornarse*. Probably one reason for the infrequency of *para* was the very infrequent occurrence of *par*<sup>1</sup> (as used in oaths, etc. *par la cabeça mia*, Alix 652), while *por* was so generally used that *pora* was, for a considerable time, carried along with it. The later success of *para* was perhaps due at least in part to the fact that, if any clear distinction between *por* and the composed prepositions with *a* was subconsciously sought, it was much less confusing to use *para* than *pora* because of the too evident provenience of the latter.

An interesting and unique instance of *ser* with *para*-infinitive is noted in *SDom* 268, illustrating the function of *goal* in the *a* of *para*, as well as the *futurity* discussed for the *por*-infinitive with *ser*: *non fue para conplir lo el Abbat perezoso*.

The one passage in which the *para*-infinitive depends on a *goal* clause is *el fuese para el rey don Fernando a Toledo para meter rrecua a la frontera*, Cron 737b43.

#### THE PARA-INFINITIVE WITH ADJECTIVES

68. At least five adjectives are noted with the *para*-infinitive, this group forming one of the strongest of the *para*-constructions at this time. In comparison with *pora*, and even with *por* which did not particularly affect use with adjectives, the *para*-infinitive is still conspicuously weak in numbers. Past participles formed a very important type of adjective construction under the *por-pora* groups. This type of infinitive use is entirely lacking for *para*.

<sup>1</sup> Menéndez Pidal, *Cid* I, § 189.

**bueno** (used also with *de*, *por* and *pora*). The infinitive as subject is approximated in *Aliz* 1449 (cf. *claro* below).

buena para poder fincar en su onrra . . . et para librar sus moros *Cron* 746a50

el jaspis que es bueno para omne lo traher *Aliz* 1449

**claro.**

mas claro que espello para onbre se veyer *Aliz* 1449

**ligero** (also takes the *de*-infinitive).

nunca para comer vi cosa tan ligera *Aliz* 799

**meior.**

entendiendo quel era meior la fincada que la yda . . . para ençimar su conquista *Cron* 748b27

**tal** (used also with *por*-infinitive).

tenien que no auie nenguno dellos tal para uengallos de Annibal *Cron* 24b7

#### THE PARA-INFINITIVE WITH INTRANSITIVE VERBS OF MOTION

69. No regular examples of the *para*-infinitive with intransitive verbs of motion are at hand, although this construction may well be considered a most characteristic type with *a*, *por* and *pora*. This fact clearly emphasizes the paucity of available examples with *para*, not any incongruity in its use with the intransitives. In *esi tiempo non era allegado Para reçibir soldada*, *Soria* 66, the *para*-infinitive depends on *tiempo* rather than on *era allegado*. For an instance of the *para*-infinitive depending on a *goal* clause, in which *yr* is the main verb, see §67.

#### THE PARA-INFINITIVE WITH REFLEXIVE VERBS

70. As was true of the intransitive verbs of motion cited above, so here with the reflexives, there are only three verbs to represent the group. These are, however, more actually representative of their type than are those noted under the other groups since each of the three reflexives is well known

with other prepositions than *para*. One of these (*guisarse*) offers four examples, which must be considered noteworthy for *para* at this period. All the citations below come from the *Crónica*.

**apartarse.**

The *a*-infinitive is also found with *apartarse*.

se quisieron . . . apartar para amostrar su orgul Cron 758b38

**guisarse.**

*De*, *por* and *pora* are also noted with *guisarse* in infinitive constructions.

guisandose para venir Cron 355a43

se guisaua para pasar alla et yr sobre ellos Cron 770b46

guisosse para yr tair Carmona Cron 749a2

para alla pasar se guisaua Cron 770b50

**tornarse.**

As reflexive or intransitive, this verb is found with all the prepositions indicating *goal* and *purpose*.

se torno para guisarse Cron 741b1

## THE *PARA*-INFINITIVE WITH TRANSITIVE VERBS

71. Another small group, with varied though few examples, is this of the transitive verbs with *para*-infinitive. The following passage might perhaps better be cited as a sporadic instance of the noun with infinitive than under the transitive verbs, since the *para*-infinitive modifies the sense of *cabeça* with the *suitable to*, *such as to*, sense noted for the *pora*-infinitive: *non he cabeça para andar sin cofia*, Cron 752a42 (*no era ya pora andar en guerras*, Cron 213a1). *Tener oio*, on the other hand, is a regular verb and noun phrase governing the *para*-infinitive. *Parar* is most representative of the usual class of verbs belonging to this group. This type of infinitive construction of course easily becomes the ordinary case of the infinitive depending on a clause (see § 50).



**parar.**

This is a very representative verb of the transitive type. *Pora*-infinitive occurs with *parar*; the *pora*- and *a*-constructions with *pararse*. The phrase *parar azes* is also used in *las azes que auíen paradas pora lidiar*, Cron 221b33.

fizieron nueuas de parar azes para los cometer Cron 759a10

**reçebir.**

No other infinitive uses are noted with *reçebir*.

A ti reçebió Don Xpo para ser su esposa Loor 204

**tener oio.**

*Pora*-infinitive is also used with *tener*, but not with a verb and noun phrase (*Teníela el buen omne non pora cavalgar, Mas pora los mezquinos lenna acarrear*, SMill 272).

Allen mar tenie oio para pasar Cron 770b27

THE INFINITIVE WITH *EN*

72. Diez<sup>1</sup> considers the Romance use of the infinitive with *en* to correspond in general to the Latin *in* with the gerund or participle (e.g. *constans in amicis laudandis*). Meyer-Lübke shows<sup>2</sup> that the extension of *en* is more notable in Spanish and Portuguese than elsewhere. Its sense can readily be understood in practically all instances, for it has preserved its primitive meaning and function better than most other prepositions. However, it has extended its sense to include the mental fields as well as the physical (*en sus pensamientos*),<sup>3</sup> and to refer to the surface of things as well as to the inside (*en la mesa*). The preposition *en* was used with the gerund more commonly than with the infinitive in the intermediate stages between Latin and Romance (as in modern French *en parlant à mes amis*). The fact that the infinitive came to replace the gerund to such an extent with *en* in Old Spanish was probably due to the ever increasing prevalence of infinitive constructions in general in this language. Compared with the necessarily restricted

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, p. 225.

<sup>2</sup> *Gram.* III, § 435.

<sup>3</sup> See Hanssen, *Gram.*, p. 298.

field of the gerund, the infinitive could be utilized in an almost unlimited variety of ways. There was also the advantage that *en* had in itself most of the force of the gerund, and that if used with the infinitive a new field was opened for development, while if used with the gerund a mere strengthening of the same function resulted. One of the normal functions of the *en*-infinitive was to indicate the accompanying circumstances of an action (*estan desauenidos en creer muchas malas creencias*, Cron 185a17). This will be remarked in many of the citations below. The *en*-infinitive currently answers the questions *where* and *how* (*metio en conjurarlo mucho maior finencia*, SDom 697; *auiuado en predigar*, Cron 277a32). From its original sense of *in, into*, it comes to have a very real function of *goal*, not so frequent as in *a, pora*, etc., but nevertheless easily recognized (e.g. with *punnar en* and *contender en*). The use of the *en*-infinitive with such phrases as *meter femencia*, *meter mano*, where the sense of the transitive *meter* determines the use of *en*, is particularly noteworthy (e.g. *metio mientes en meiorar su tierra*, Cron 294a48). Its fitness for answering the question *how* permits it in some cases to indicate the *means* of an action, as with the reflexives *deleitarse* and *darse vagar*. But *en* is particularly appropriate for use with adjectives (see following section: e.g. *En laudar la Gloriosa todos eran ardientes*, Mil 853; *crudos eran en mal fazer*, Cron 609a24).

#### THE EN-INFINITIVE WITH ADJECTIVES

73. One of the most normal constructions of the *en*-infinitive is with adjectives, since with them it indicates *how* the action of the infinitive is applicable to the sense of the adjective (*muy sotil en assacar de suyo cosas nuevas*, Cron 121b48; *sabios . . . en deffender nuestra ley*, Cron 158a3). Delicateshades of other meanings can at times be felt in the *en*-infinitive (*place where, means, time*), particularly with participles which partake of the sense of the simple verb (*auiuado en predigar*, Cron 277a32; *engannada en te combater*, Cron 133b19). Even with participles the expression of *manner* is decidedly predominant in the *en*-

infinitive, other senses merging imperceptibly into this one. The *de*-infinitive most nearly approaches the *en*-construction with adjectives, but is not so strong or individual in prepositional force (*liuiano de creer el mal*, Cron 451a3; *franque en dar su auer*, Cron 477b7). The *de*-infinitive is quite frequently susceptible of passive force, while activity is most often postulated by the *en*-infinitive (*en veer muy çerteros*, Sig 55; *En laudar la Gloriosa todos eran ardientes*, Mil 853; *ligera de fazer*, Cron 420b11; *serie muy grieue cosa de contar*, Cron 20a46). Comparatively few of the adjectives below are noted with other than the *en*-infinitive (exc. *sabio*, *sabidor*, *auiuado*, etc.). The best single illustration of the use of the *en*-infinitive with adjectives is found in *Mil* 404:

Si en fer el peccado fueron çiegos e botos,  
Fueron en emendarlo firmes e muy devotos.

(a) *Adjectives.*

**ardiente.**

En laudar la Gloriosa todos eran ardientes *Mil* 853

(bien) **andante.**

yo fuy bien andante en conbrar a uos, et uos fuestes bien andante  
en cobrar a mi *Cron* 618a44

**çertero.**

en veer muy çerteros *Sig* 55

**crudo.**

ellos cada uegada mas crudos eran en mal fazer *Cron* 609a24

**flaco.**

The citation below is of interest by reason of the modification of the adjective as well as the use of subject and object with the *en*-infinitive.

por se no mostrar por flaco de coraçon en lo uencer amor de  
mugier *Cron* 123a42

**franque.**

muy franque en soltar los pechos *Cron* 142a53  
franque en dar su auer *Cron* 477b7  
franque en partir et dar su auer *Cron* 478b49

**piadoso.**

fue tan piadoso . . . en la onrar et en uenir a su mandado,  
et en le dar et otorgarle todo quanto ella querie *Cron* 162a29

**sabidor** (noted also with *de*-infinitive).

En dar conseios malos era muy sabidor *Mil* 723

**sabio** (also takes *pora*-infinitive).

sabios en el saber . . . et en deffender nuestra ley *Cron* 158a2

**sobeio.**

Avinie bien sobeio en leer, en cantar *SLaur* 21

**sotil.**

muy sotil en assacar de suyo cosas nuevas *Cron* 121b49

**uagaroso.**

era muy uagaroso en dar las dignidades *Cron* 137a38

**(b) Participles.****acordado** (noted also with *por*-infinitive).

En saludar a ella era bien acordado *Mil* 102

En prender el su seso fueron bien acordados *SLaur* 4

**auiuado** (infinitive constructions with *por* and *pora* also occur).

auiuado en predigar *Cron* 277a32

**complido.**

era complido en dezir, et en fazer, et en dar, et en penssar todos  
los bienes *Cron* 692b19

**desauenido.**

estan desauenidos en creer muchas malas creencias *Cron* 185a17

**engannado.**

engannada . . . en te combater *Cron* 133b19

**granado.**

granado en dar elmosnas *Cron* 277a29

granado en dar de su auer *Cron* 278a6

**sofrido** (the *pora*-infinitive is also used with *sofrido*).

en comer sofrido *Cron* 277a36

## THE EN-INFINITIVE WITH METER AND PONER

74. These two verbs are the most important representatives of the type of transitive verbs having an object with dependent *en*-infinitive. There is only one example of *poner* so used, but this is a normal illustration of the principle involved:

Ponian toda femencia en fer a Dios serviçio *Soria* 13

In this instance, *en* has an almost literal sense of *in, into*, thus preserving its most primitive and inherent force. *Meter* likewise keeps this normal force for *en* in all the various locutions cited below, resembling very closely that of *poner* above. The most frequent single locution noted is *meter femencia en* (*En buscarli muerte mala metien toda femencia*, *Mil* 378). As was true of the *en*-infinitive with adjectives, there is also for these *meter* locutions a corresponding *de*-infinitive construction. Here again the relative *de* introduces practically an object-infinitive (. . . *que uos meta en coraçon de sacarle ende*, *Cron* 355a20). In one instance, the pronoun *lo* takes the place of the substantive with *meter*: *lo que meter podiesse en captiuos sacar*, *SDom* 363.

**meter cura.**

en guardar aellos metia toda su cura *SDom* 18

**meter femencia.**

En laudar los sos fechos metien toda femencia *Mil* 27

En buscarli serviçio methie toda femencia *Mil* 50

En buscarli muerte mala metien toda femencia *SDom* 378

metio en conjurarlo mucho maior fimencia *SDom* 697

en fer aDios seruicio methia toda femencia *SDom* 326

grand femencia metio ell en fazerla *Cron* 346b46, 347b16

**meter mano.**

metiera mano en robar las eglesias *Cron* 292b13

**meter mientes.**

metio mientes en meiorar su tierra *Cron* 294a48

**meter mission.**

En complir con su offiçio metien toda mission *SLaur* 5

**meter voluntad.**

metie en complirlo toda su voluntad *SDom* 263

VERBS WITHOUT OBJECT TAKING *en*-INFINITIVE

75. In this group are included all the verbs taking *en*-infinitive that do not have an object present such as was discussed under *meter* and *poner* in the section above (*metio en conjurarlo mucho maior fimençia*, SDom 697). Several of these verbs are real intransitives that do not take a direct object under any circumstances (*pesar*, *estar*, *valer*), while others will be found that occur quite frequently with such an object (*dubdar*, *cuydar*). It will be found that in nearly all instances with these verbs, the *en*-infinitive indicates the *manner* of the action (as it does with adjectives, etc.) and rarely has its literal sense of *in*, *into*, noted with the transitive *meter* and *poner*. The *de*-infinitive is perhaps the nearest approach among the prepositional uses to the *en*-construction with these verbs, yet here the object relation predominates with *de*, while with *en* that of *manner* and *goal* are more conspicuous (in the end coming to a moderate similarity of sense: *siempre contiende de valer a cuitados*, Mil 623; *les era mester de contender en tenerse et non caer*, Cron 71a22; *Dixol que non dubdase de fer su maestria*, Alix 2230; *non dubdas en meterte a periglo de muerte*, Cron 40b12). The indication of *goal* by the *en*-infinitive is best illustrated in its use with *contender*, *punnar* and *trabaiar* (also taking the infinitives with *de* and *por*), and this is an important extension of the *en*-function (*punnaron en tollerse las tierras*, Cron 5a35; *trabaiastes . . . en ganar çibdades*, Cron 555b6). With *estar*, there is also a development of the *place* function in the preposition, and even greater *immediacy* of action is indicated than with *por* (*estaua en desempararse et dar se ya a morir*, Cron 91b33; *li estaba por exir la almiella*, SMill 343). With *durar* the *en*-infinitive is said to indicate time (*en ganar aquellas villas mio Çid duró tres años*, Cid 1169).<sup>1</sup>

**acordar.**

The *de*-infinitive is also used with *acordar*; *de*, *a*, *por* and *en* with *acordarse*:

acuerdan todos los sabios en contar el fecho de los godos Cron 217b1

<sup>1</sup> Menéndez Pidal, *Cid* I, § 161.

**andar.**

The prepositions *a* and *por* also introduce the infinitive with *andar*. The equivalent construction of substantive and infinitive is to be noted in this citation:

yo ando en seruicio de Dios et en uengar el mal *Cron* 564a33

**consentir.**

*Consentir* also takes the pure and *de*-infinitives.

non querie consentir con ell en seguir sus malas leys *Cron* 260b45

**contender.**

Next to *punnar* this is the most frequent verb taking the *en*-infinitive. Much the same sense is found in the two verbs, and with both of these the *en*-infinitive indicates the *goal* of the action (see introductory paragraph, this section). *Contender* also takes *de*, *por* and *pora* with its infinitive, *de* being most affected.

plorando delos oios contendia en orar *SDom* 579

Contendie . . . en fer a Dios plaçer,  
Convertir los errados, los pobres apaçer *SMill* 100

Contendien cada dia en fer desaguisado *SMill* 367

les era mester de contender en tenerse et non caer *Cron* 71a22

contendie todauia en uenir a aquellas cosas *Cron* 664a31

mas cataron por contender en matar los enemigos *Cron* 704a19

**cresçer.**

No other infinitive construction occurs with *cresçer*.

cresçio en tener mayor companna *Cron* 574a35

**cuydar.**

The first instance below shows the *en*-infinitive in equivalent construction with the substantive *fechos*. Both cases differ notably from the types with *de*- and with pure infinitive (*cuydo de mentir*, *Alix* 2271; *non cuydo y peccar*, *SDom* 581), *cuydar* with *en* being strong and literal (*to think about, concerning*).

cuydan en los fechos de la carne et en beuer *Cron* 151b27  
 estauan cuydando en escoier rey entressi *Cron* 230a30

### **dubdar.**

The *de*-infinitive with *dubdar* does not possess the slightly *temporal* sense given by *en*. The pure infinitive use is frequent with *dubdar*.

non dubdas en meterte a periglo de muerte *Cron* 40b12

### **entender.**

The *a*-infinitive also occurs with *entender*.

El nono en cubdiçia mala quitar entiende *Loor* 90

### **estar.**

*Estar* with *en*-infinitive indicates even greater *immediacy* of action in the infinitive than *estar* with the *por*-construction (see § 54). Usually it may be rendered by *to be in the act of*. The three instances at hand come from the *Crónica*.

estaua en desampararse e dar se ya a morir *Cron* 91b33  
 estudieron todas las conpannas del Çid en guysar sus armas et  
 en armarse et en cargar las azemilas *Cron* 637a16  
 estando en partirse *Cron* 648b38

### **lazdrar.**

No other infinitive construction is at hand for *lazdrar*.

mucho lazdre en la ganar *Cron* 605a30  
 . . . Que io tanto lazdrasse en la muerte pedir *Duelo* 125

### **pesar.**

The *en*-infinitive is here a variant for the subject-infinitive so common with *de*, or without preposition, and may have a *temporal*, *instrumental* or *modal* function. The personal subject here becomes the indirect object with an impersonal verb.

. . . quel pesarie por uentura en dezirle que . . . *Cron* 644a46

### **punnar.**

This is the most frequent verb of the group, *goal* being indicated by means of the *en*-infinitive, in the same way as that



noted for *contender* and *trabaiar*. This verb with *en*-infinitive is of frequent occurrence in the *Crónica*, but is not found elsewhere. The *de*-infinitive is also common with *punnar*. The two prepositions express two different views of the relation of *punnar* to its infinitive, *de* being rendered by *relative to*, *with respect to* . . . and *en* by *to*, *toward the goal of* . . .

punnaron en tollerse las tierras Cron 5a35

punnaron en la auer Cron 22a36

. . . que . . . punnassen en fazer bien Cron 3b32

punno el en mantener el sennorio Cron 168a42

punno en servir al comun de Roma Cron 168b43

punnando en seguir la porfia Cron 214a36

. . . que punnassen en auer y otro conseio Cron 256b43

punnaua en abenir los omnes por amiztat Cron 388a3

punnaron en llegar su sennor a la mayor onrra Cron 390a29

punnaron en guardarse de fazer mal fecho Cron 392b39

Also: Cron 468a51, 549b43, 562a27, 744a49, 754a5, 755b4, 762a41, 762a2, 765b1, 771b7, 772b44.

#### **ser.**

Two cases with *en*-infinitive occur in the *Crónica*. Both instances may be considered as somewhat exceptional, the first as an emphatic substitute for the simple conditional of the infinitive, the second more regular in its indication of the *manner of fue con el*.

dixieron que serien en ayudarle a todas las cosas Cron 631b25

fue con el en guardarle del enganno Cron 672a42

#### **tardar.**

No other infinitive use is noted with *tardar*.

era mejor de yr su carrera . . . que non tardar en combater castiello Cron 695b31

#### **tornar.**

With verbs of motion *en* naturally has a *place* or *goal* function. The preposition *a* is much more frequent in this use (*él a las niñas tornólas a catar*, Cid 371). Iteration is not apparent.

tornaron le en seer sannudos Cron 75a3  
 començaron . . . a tornar en tener lo por mal si fuxiessen  
 Cron 75a19

### trabaiar.

As with *contender* and *punnar*, principally the goal of the effort is here shown by means of the *en*-infinitive. *Trabaiarse* appears as a reflexive with pure, *por*-, *en*- and *de*-infinitives.

trabaiastes siempre mucho en ganar çibdades Cron 555b6

### valer (u-).

The *en*-infinitive indicates *manner* in the first instance below. An *en*-variant for the pure subject-infinitive is seen in the second citation; cf. *pesar* above.

Todos los dias del siglo en levar lo adelant

El Cid siempre valdra mas Cid 1442

mas ualie en auer alguno dellos consigo . . . que non tenellos  
 esparzudos Cron 23a7

## THE EN-INFINITIVE WITH REFLEXIVE VERBS

76. A few reflexive verbs take *en*-infinitive to express the *manner* of an action (*darse uagar*, etc.). The *cause* or *means* is approximated with others (*preciarse*, *deleytarse*), while in at least one instance there is a *place* relation (*fallarse*). It is of course true that these relations are not absolute, but only relative; a fusion of functions can sometimes be noted (e.g. *preciarse*, cause and means) as well as instances where any one of several functions would fit sufficiently well (*trabaiarse*, goal, manner, time).

### acordarse.

*De*, *a* and *por* are also used with the infinitive depending on *acordarse*.

non se acordaua en catar que omne era Cron 466a29

tan bien se acordara en guardar su omenaie et en quitar las  
 arcas Cron 594a44

**atreuerse.**

The pure, *de-* and *a-*infinitives are noted with *atreuerse*.

atreuiendosse en lidiar *Cron* 324b13

se atreuién ya en ayuntarse en casa de vn alcalde *Cron* 565b29

**darse uagar.**

tan grand uagar se dio en las yr a asseseggar *Cron* 127a6

**delectarse.**

See introductory paragraph, this section, *deleytarse*.

delectandose . . . en cantar a Dios et alabarle et pedirle  
merced *Cron* 685b9

**deleytarse.**

See *delectarse* above.

se deleyta en ello gloriar *Aliz* 2379

deleytauasse en auer muchas mugieres uirgines *Cron* 187b42

**fallarse.**

In this instance, a developed place function is noted in *en* (cf. *estar* and *ser* with *en*-infinitive above).

fallaron se el et el senado en alongallos lo mas que pudiessen  
*Cron* 230b48

**preciarse.**

The *en*-infinitive may express *manner* or *cause* with *preciarse*.  
The *de*-infinitive also expresses *cause* with this verb.

preciese en seruir a Dios *Cron* 311a14

**trabaiarse.**

One instance is noted above of *en*-infinitive with *trabaiar* and without reflexive pronoun. Used reflexively, this becomes a current construction in the *Crónica*. *Trabaiarse* occurs even more often with *de*-infinitive; cf. *punnar* and *contender* above.

trabaiaronse mucho en defender la cristiandat *Cron* 450b2

trabaiuase . . . en echar del regno a Ysem *Cron* 451b51

se trabaiarien si pudiessen en matar a ell *Cron* 457a31

non dexaua . . . de trabaiarse quanto podie en uer . . . *Cron*  
462a51

se trabaiaua de buenas obras, muy mas se trabaio . . . en  
fazer fechos que plazien a Dios *Cron* 491b47

*Trabaiarse* also takes *en*-infinitive in *Cron* 632a33, 724a5.

#### THE INFINITIVE WITH OTHER PREPOSITIONS AND PREPOSITIONAL SUBSTITUTES

77. In this section will be treated the remaining prepositions, simple and composed, that occur in so few instances that individual classification is not necessary. These rarer prepositions and prepositional substitutes make up one of the most interesting word-groups of the language, because they illustrate the natural growth of language through the combination and adaptation of elements already present in the vocabulary of the people. In this way, participles might be utilized as prepositions (*durante, excepto*, etc.).<sup>1</sup> Another method of composing new prepositions was that of using adverbs with simple prepositions (most often *de* or *a*): *acerca de, cerca de, ademas de, menos de, enantes de, fuera de*. In some of these cases a preposition both precedes and follows the adverb. In this way *acerca de* can be analyzed as coming from *ad circa de, enantes de* from *in ante-s de*, etc. The adverb standing alone may be given the functions of a preposition (see *fuera* below). Aside from the method of combining the adverb and simple preposition to form new composed prepositions, there is the preposition and noun combination that likewise occurs quite often. Of this sort are the locutions *en guisa de, en lugar de, en uez de, por razon de*, etc. These, when strictly analyzed, must be considered as a special type of the *de*-infinitive depending on a noun, but being employed in certain combinations so often they take on a group identity of their own. All the Romance languages utilize noun and preposition to form new combinations in the same way as Old Spanish. These combinations are theoretically limited only by the number and sense of the nouns concerned, since nearly all nouns offer themselves as possibilities for such combinations. Aside from these com-

<sup>1</sup> See Hanssen, *Gram.*, p. 316.

posed prepositions, there are of course several simple prepositions, employed only occasionally (e.g. *sin* and *sobre*), which are also treated in this section.

**açerca de, çerca de.**

One example is at hand for each of these two forms. In the first form the locative preposition *ad* is prefixed to the adverb, in the other the adverb completes its meaning by merely taking *de* with the governed word. Thus the sense must originally have been *near in regard to, with respect to (relative de)*. It should also be noted that the *a* of *açerca* is naturally attracted by *llegar*. (It is of interest in this connection that the *Cid* uses *après de* in the sense of *cerca de*, but not with the infinitive: *après son de Valençia*, *Cid* 1559.<sup>1</sup>)

llego ya el dia açerca de ponerse el sol *Cron* 703b46  
estaua muy cerca de conquerillos *Cron* 30a35

**ademas de.**

Here again the adverb derives its prepositional function from the use of *de*.

fueron y grandes alegrias ademas de alañar a tablados et de  
boffordar et de correr todos et de iogar tablas *Cron* 431b21

**(a)menos de.**

This combination appears with the first preposition separate from, or joined with, the adverb (*a menos de*), or with *a* omitted entirely (*menos de*). This is one of the more frequent of these composed prepositions, though all instances with infinitive come from the *Crónica*.

**a menos de.**

numqua fазie ninguna cosa a menos de seer y el maestro de las  
uozes *Cron* 122b49  
mataualo a menos de lo oyr *Cron* 131b36, 583a32

**amenos de.**

amenos de auer y calçadas *Cron* 12a15  
amenos dasseguralle *Cron* 32b28  
amenos de perder quanto auien *Cron* 736a18

<sup>1</sup> See Hanssen, *Gram.*, p. 308.

amenos de saber . . . cierto logar *Cron* 36b33

amenos dabenir se con las yentes de la tierra *Cron* 15a17

*menos de.*

non farie fecho ninguno menos de mostrarlo a el primero *Cron* 550a7

non podrien estar en paz, nin otrossi guerrear, menos de auer  
ell amor del Çid *Cron* 564b45

**enantes de, antes que.**

The form *antes de* is to be expected in Old Spanish with the infinitive, but it is not found in the texts examined.<sup>1</sup> The combination *enantes de* occurs once with the meaning that *antes de* would have: *iré a la cort enantes de yantar*, *Cid* 3051. Here a purely *temporal* sense is felt. With the conjunction *que*, *ante* and *antes* are found frequently in the *Crónica* with the infinitive, but the *temporal* sense of *enantes de* is not conspicuous in these constructions. On the other hand, the analogy with *mas que* seems to have operated, as well as that with the comparatives taking *que* and the infinitive in the sense of *than to*. But the *temporal* idea persists in *antes*, giving a fusion of the *temporal* and *comparative* senses in *antes que* that is not found in *mas que* and its equivalents. The use of a *temporal* for a more correct *comparative* construction is particularly natural to popular speech (cf. vulgar English *I'd sooner do this than that* and the colloquial *I'd starve before I'd accept charity*).

*ante(s) que:*

muramos todos ante que soffrir tantos pesares *Cron* 396b44

aiuen sabor de morir antes que ser uençudos *Cron* 416a24

querie seer ante muerto que beuir aquella uida *Cron* 427b23

ante deuiera yr al rey uer que entrar en la egleſia *Cron* 443b30

pusieron con ell de dargelos ante que perder . . . *Cron* 565a3

tenien la muerte ya por saborosa, ante que passar aquella  
lazeria *Cron* 586a38

ante que perder todo el regno . . . *Cron* 653b34

ante querrie lidiar con un uiuo que tirar un muerto del campo  
*Cron* 517b45, 453b3

<sup>1</sup> See, however, Hanssen, *Gram.*, p. 307.

In only one citation above is the epenthetic negative employed after *antes . . . que*, a phenomenon common enough with *mas que* (*antes me quiero yr . . . que non ser uençudo en campo et fincar por aleuoso*, Cron 516a36).

**como a.**

This group occurs once in the *Crónica* with the sense of *as if to . . .*

*çinnossela como a armar cauallero* Cron 719a8

**en guisa de.**

This group illustrates the use of one of the nouns meaning *manner, way, fashion*, etc. similar to the French *de façon d* with infinitive.

*en guisa de auer merçet* Cron 675b13

**en logar de.**

This corresponds to the French *au lieu de, place where* thus being expressed in French by *d* and in Spanish by *en*.

*En logar de servirte búscote grant pesar* SMill 104

*En logar de buscarli serviçio e amor*

*Buscaronli bulliçio e toda desonor* Duelo 71

*en logar de mantenerlos en iusticia* Cron 333b43

*en logar de ser consegeros son losengeros* Cron 419a45

**en quanto en.**

Cf. French *quant d* with infinitive. The *en*-construction is found in this instance only.

*dioxles que en quanto en husar ellos sus costunbres* Cron 590b43

**en uez de.**

This group has the same general sense as *en logar de*, but with the noun concept at the basis of the construction *temporal* instead of *local*. The locution *en uez de* is rarer than *en logar de*, and is noted only in the *Crónica*.

en uez de castigar los otros . . . *Cron* 111b6

Fue estonce establecido en vez de comulgar, que cutiano viniesen todos la paz tomar *Cron* 289a2

en uez de sacar Castiella de la premia . . . *Cron* 392b33

**fascas, fasta.**

For provenience from Arabic *atá* and *hacia*, see Hanssen, *Gram.*, p. 313.

pero juraron todos, tantos eran esforçados,  
que se non fuesen dende fasta seyer vengados *Aliz* 582

esto es dotar elesia fascas darle arras como a esposa de Cristo  
*Cron* 540b6

**fuera, fuera(s) de.**

This group was probably of pre-Romance combination.<sup>1</sup> In this instance also the adverb sometimes took on prepositional functions directly.

Non sabien en la cosa nul conseio tomar,

\* Fuera yr a los montes otra viga buscar *SMil* 233

Non avie el obispo embargo nin laçerio,

Fuera cantar su missa e rezar so salterio *Mil* 709

non tenie en coraçon fueras de destroyllos *Cron* 49b14

era en todo guisado, fuera de beuir et de conquerir mas *Cron*  
771a10

**por razon de.**

This combination of noun and prepositions, like *por tal de* with infinitive (see below), also expresses *purpose*. Only two examples are at hand, and those from the *Crónica*.

fizieron lo los godos so princep por razon de guerrear con el et  
auer batallas contra las otras yentes *Cron* 233a49

por razon de sacar aun mas auer *Cron* 684a33

**por tal de.**

This interesting combination is noted only in the *Crónica*, but in this text is exceptionally frequent. It expresses *purpose*, and may be considered as a strong substitute for the simple *por*. A rare instance of two *purpose* clauses depending on a

<sup>1</sup> Meyer-Lübke, *Gram.* III, § 269.



single finite verb occurs in *los otros por tal de desfoyr la desonra et ell enzeco del pleyto, beuieron poçon por tal de se matar*, Cron 111b47.

- por tal de la guardar Cron 122b45  
 fizieron lo que pudieron por tal de non perder el poder Cron 127a17  
 Començo a pensar Nero en muchas guisas por tal de no auer a obedecer a Galba Cron 127b43  
 por tal de auialle el coraçon Cron 128b17  
 por tal de puair todauia mas, punno en seruir al comun de Roma Cron 168b42  
 por tal de toller el sennorio a Maximino . . . puso sus pazes con Costantino Cron 182a20  
 por tal de desfoyr los sacrificios . . . fuxosse pora los montes Cron 184b3  
 por tal de fincar empaz Cron 214a25  
 por tal de auer los godos de su parte . . . dio Narbona al rey Theoderico Cron 239b51  
 por tal de cobrar la partida de la tierra que se quitara dellos Cron 286a31.

Also: Cron 268a8, 286b4, 290b19, 314a43, 332a43, 503a33, 733a14.

**saluo de.**

Cf. French *sauf*, also with infinitive.

- non pudo auer acuerdo de otro aperçebimiento, saluo de se acoier Cron 756a3

**syn, sin.**

Meyer-Lübke states that *sine* was adopted in all the Romance territory.<sup>1</sup> *Sin* with infinitive occurs rarely outside the *Crónica*. Its sense prevented any great development of function by the preposition.

- syn esto entender Aliz 393  
 sin otro mal lleuar Aliz 2563  
 se fio en la palaura de sos enemigos sin tomar arrahenes dellos Cron 24a36

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, § 509. See also Hanssen, *Gram.*, p. 309.

non deuen escapar sin recebir grandes penas *Cron* 34a49  
sin fazer yo tuerto a to fijo *Cron* 151a41  
fueronse luego sin espedirse allend mar *Cron* 275a4  
tomara el solo el imperio . . . sin dezirgelo antes *Cron* 379b25  
sin ell et sin consentirlo ell *Cron* 431a13

Also: *Cron* 484a23, 534a1, 676a27, 727a35, 728b47, 738b4,  
739b18, 762a12, 127b12.

**sobre.<sup>1</sup>**

This preposition is found with *comer* as the infinitive in two instances. *Comer* is found at times to become largely substantival in nature.

nunca sobre comer non seas denodado *Aliz* 59  
fallecio el uino sobre comer *Cron* 113b29

**sobre razon de.**

In this combination is noted yet another variant for the simple *por* in its *purpose* function (see *por tal de*, *por razon de*).

fueronse pora Burgos sobre razon de fazer esta salua *Cron*  
519a46

<sup>1</sup> For *sobre* and *sobra* see Hanssen, *Gram.*, pp. 310, 311.

## PART III

### SPECIAL CONSTRUCTION

#### THE INFINITIVE WITH SUBJECT

78. One of the most striking constructions of Old Spanish is the infinitive with subject. Spanish cannot pretend to rival Portuguese in originality of treatment of this construction, since in Portuguese alone is found the personal or inflected infinitive with a distinctive form for each person, the personal ending being added to the infinitive.<sup>1</sup> It is not within the territory of this immediate study to describe in great detail the Portuguese construction, interesting as it is, but it deserves a few words in passing, so that the Spanish construction may not be confused with it. The personal infinitive in Portuguese has the same *raison d'être* as the infinitive with subject in Spanish, i.e. the necessity of defining the subject of the action, especially in those cases where confusion was probable. *Basta ser dominante* is not definite, but with *eu* added, all doubt of the application of the sentence disappears: *Basta ser eu dominante*. Inasmuch as at certain times *ser eu* had the form *seres (tu)* as its correspondent for the second person, *seres* was adopted as an infinitive form with clear indication of the subject. In the same way, other personal endings were borrowed from the conjugated verb to be added to the infinitive for similar use in the other persons. Originally restricted to phrases where the subject of the conjugated verb and that of the infinitive were different, the personal infinitive acquired gradual extension until it was employed where its subject was the object of an active verb, and then where the two verbs had the same subject. It was optional whether the personal infinitive

<sup>1</sup> See Otto, *Der Port. Inf.*, § 54-§ 67.

should be employed when the subject was the same for the two verbs, but when different, the personal form was regular.

In Spanish no endings are borrowed from the conjugated verb for use with the infinitive in order to indicate the subject. The subject takes the nominative form when standing with the infinitive, not the accusative as in Latin, and has no apparent organic connection with any other member of the sentence. This fact is noted by Diez,<sup>1</sup> who goes on to say that such a construction was absolutely foreign to Latin, and that it may be the transformation of a compound proposition into a simple proposition with the nominative form of the pronoun kept intact. Thus *el decirlo yo no os ofenda* may represent *que lo digo yo no os ofenda*, with the legitimate subject retained when the infinitive replaces the finite form of the verb. Diez would in the same manner explain the personal infinitive of the Portuguese. It does not seem to me necessary to seek so complicated an explanation for the Spanish construction. Subject-pronouns were apparently used with the infinitive in much the same way as with any other verb form. For the sake of emphasis, or to avoid ambiguity, the subject-pronouns were employed with ordinary finite verb forms (*quiere que yo diga la verdad*). What more simple than using the same pronouns for the same purpose with the infinitive, especially since, due to the unsettled language conditions of the times, the classical rule of accusative with infinitive might naturally have been forgotten long since by the common people who could neither read nor write? This use of subject-pronouns with the infinitive was especially facilitated by the non-existence in Spanish of intermediate pronominal forms for cases of emphasis and ambiguity (such as the French *disjunctives*). In any event, the fact remains that the ordinary subject-pronouns did function with the infinitive in Spanish and there appears no evidence of any desire to employ the object-pronouns similarly (*Lazdrar tu e tu Fïio*, *Duelo* 92).

<sup>1</sup> *Gram.* III, p. 230, 2.

The use of the article with the infinitive when the latter has a subject (*el decirlo yo*) later becomes regular in Spanish, but in the texts utilized for this study is not noted. This is probably due in part to the fact that in the early language the pronoun-subject stands before the infinitive more frequently than in later periods, and in this position the article is quite superfluous (*non me semeia guisado de uos yo conseiar que uayades*, Cron 497b41). The third person masculine singular (*el, ell*) as subject is kept regularly after the infinitive, thus avoiding any possible misconstruction (*sin consentirlo ell o su fijo*, Cron 431a13; *mas guisado era de yr ell*, Cron 437a7).

In the paragraphs immediately following, examples of the pure infinitive with subject will first be given, then corresponding instances of the prepositional infinitive similarly used. These illustrative examples are taken from various texts, and show a variety of syntactical constructions. The *Cid* is notably lacking in such infinitive types, while the *Crónica* employs them abundantly.

non serie buen derecho A vassallo ageno io buscar tal provecho  
*Mil* 739

Serate, sancto padre, por grant yerro tenido  
Tu entrar en tal gena, yo fincar desffamnido *SLaur* 67

bien es que gela dedes, et yo darle XV de mios fijos *Cron*  
507a26

In the three citations above, the subject is a pronoun and clearly in the nominative. Other instances of such pronominal use will be found under the prepositional infinitive. A considerable number of noun- and pronoun-subjects occur, which are also considered to be regular, i. e. in the nominative.

. . . fago me mucho marauillado  
pueblo de tan grant presçio por natura senado,  
en cosa tan abierta seyer tan enbargado *Alix* 1190

serie grant daño tantas gentes morir *Alix* 2169

El obispo que esso auie de ministrar  
non conviene sin sangue quel rancon entrar *Sac* 91

Faziese Alixandre mucho marauillado  
 omne tan mal traydo seyer tan acordado *Aliz* 2193  
 e la sangre de los romanos seer esparzida por los sus terminos  
*Cron* 45a51  
 lo que era peor de todo, uenir los dAffrica a Roma *Cron* 45a49  
 e seer aquellos uençudos *Cron* 46b31  
 grieue cosa es dexar el omne lo que mucho a tomado en costumbre  
*Cron* 73a13  
 tal conseio como aquel nin uuscar se ell omne tal ayuda ni era  
 cosa prouechosa nin de fazer *Cron* 75a8  
 et seer ellos onrados *Cron* 108b2  
 e affogar omne sus fijos es dalles de pequennos et assoora  
 grandes sennorios *Cron* 145b43  
 Lazdrar tu e tu Fiio por las almas salvar *Duelo* 92  
 profession fazer el frayre, es renunçiar el mundo *Cron* 692a3  
 . . . que . . . estar todo so fecho com en uentura de se perder  
*Cron* 23a9  
 es uillania lidiar omne por costumbres contra lo que ensenna  
 a los otros *Cron* 143a7  
 por uer ell infiant a su esposa *Cron* 470a2  
 Costunbre era de cada dia yr guardar los herueros los cau-  
 lleros *Cron* 764a41  
 Asmaua en pues esto ques dexasen vençer,  
 desenparar las tiendas e todo el auer,  
 todos por do estouiesen foyr a grant poder  
 e toda la villa de Troya trasponer *Aliz* 722

Certain instances occur in which there is no grammatical subject actually functioning with the infinitive, but in which the word that might have been construed as subject is given a prepositional relation to the finite verb forms. These phrases indicate how thoroughly a slight shift of expression may change the grammatical relation of the infinitive and its modifiers. A typical example of the process involved is *Aliz* 26:

seria fiera onta e grant mal paresçer  
 por el rey Alixandre a omne obedeçer

The sense of the passage would remain perfectly intact if the *por* were omitted and *el rey* made the subject of the infinitive, but, with *por* employed, *el rey* becomes little more than an indirect object, and *obedeçer* is deprived of its subject. Other prepositional relations will be noted in the two cases below, and can be analyzed in some such way as that above:

Grand cosa fue, Eneas, duna muger poder se defender contra  
tantos enemigos, e non se poder defender a la tu lengua  
sola Cron 42a41

es bien atales omes solitarios beuir Aliz 1602

Theoretically, any preposition is eligible to govern an infinitive with subject. In practice *de* is by far the most common. A typical example of the *de*-infinitive thus employed is at hand in Cron 692a28: *non serie ligera de mantenerla et gouernarla un prinçep*. Here the comparatively unattached condition of *prinçep* is particularly felt. Furthermore, the use of the *de*-infinitive in this phrase is clearly the same as in such passages as Cron 751a32: *serie guisado de yr*, etc. The prepositional relations in the citations below are numerous and interesting, but do not merit individual explanation at this time. It should be remarked, however, that the subject of the infinitive may be neither a noun nor a pronoun but a whole clause (*Mas porque es graue cosa de se mudar lo que viene por natura, no pudo estar Nero que al cabo no saliesse del consejo de los sabios*, Cron 124b14).

Dissolis a la ora de la alma essir SMill 299

llego el dia açerca de ponerse el sol Cron 703b46

numqua fazie ninguna cosa a menos de seer y el maestro de las  
uozes Cron 122b49

dioxles que en quanto en husar ellos sus costunbres . . . Cron  
590b43

sin fazer yo tuerto a to fijo . . . Cron 151a41

te terna danno alli por non te querer Dios ayudar Cron 40b47  
non devie . . . sofrir Por tan grant luminaria alli se encobrir

SMill 40

por auer las naues uagar de se salir Cron 761b28

el desden de no querer los omnes saber las cosas *Cron* 3a18  
 no era marauilla de tan grand mortandat seer mostrada por  
 tantas sennales *Cron* 236b34  
 se non quiso partir de la postura que tenie dell officio de Francia  
 seer recebido en Espanna *Cron* 542b51  
 serie carrera de auer todos paz *Cron* 410b16  
 repintiosse por quel cresçiera tan grand cobdicia de querer ell  
 auer tod ell Andaluzia tan ayna *Cron* 558b28  
 era cosa desapuesta de tan grand prinçep . . . ueuir desor-  
 denado *Cron* 718a35  
 es rrazon . . . de gelo razonar omne *Cron* 728a50  
 no era derecho ni bien de seer ellos so el poder de los romanos  
 ni aguardallos *Cron* 230a26  
 . . . de uos querer agora assi embargar a uos et a uuestras  
 compannas de leuar muertos a uuestros logares *Cron* 405b31  
 Costumbre era . . . de criar se los donzelles et las donzellas  
 fijos de los altos omnes en el palacio del rey *Cron* 307b30  
 guisado es de fincar uos assy *Cron* 609a30  
 mas noble cosa era de ueerle sus fijas et sus yernos assy *Cron*  
 639b8

**Examples of the prepositional object of the finite verb standing in place of the infinitive subject are noted as follows:**

Graue cosa fue all arçobispo de uenir . . . al rey *Cron* 291a19  
 uerguença es a omne de dezirlo nin de oyrlo, et mucho mas ya de  
 seguirlo *Cron* 274a26

#### THE INFINITIVE IN APPPOSITION WITH A NOUN OR PRONOUN

79. The following citations illustrate the use of the infinitive in apposition with some other word in the sentence. This is strictly speaking the grammatical category to which the infinitives in these passages belong, yet probably in few cases did the writer or speaker realize any material difference between the cases of so-called apposition and those of the corresponding regular infinitive constructions. A good example of this type of infinitive occurs in *Soria* 200: *Yo non lo merezria de seer tan honrrada*. To the poet it doubtless made little difference



(except in syllabication) whether the *lo* were used in the sentence or not, though perhaps a degree of anticipatory emphasis was gained by the use of *lo*. In certain other cases, however, the pronoun had a somewhat more real function: *De dezir falsedades aslo por hereditat*, SMill 267. Here the phrase would be rather incomplete without the pronoun, as a summing up at this point avoids any possible misunderstanding of the sense. It will be seen that the appositional infinitive was decidedly frequent, an abundance of examples being cited below. The infinitive might stand in apposition with a pronoun, a noun, or an adjective treated as a substantive (*Prisieron un conseio . . . Tornar enna Gloriosa que los façe arder*, Mil 388; *Siempre cobdiçie esto, . . . apartarme del mundo*, SDom 100; *qual serie lo meior: de yr a los moros o atenderlos*, Cron 392a38). Several instances are noted of the infinitive in apposition with a relative clause and its antecedent (*lo que era peor de todo, uenir los dAffrica a Roma*, Cron 45a49). There is found a greater proportion of the citations of this section from the poetry of the period than from the prose of the *Crónica*. This is doubtless due to the fact that it is the usual tendency of prose to be more simple and direct in its employment of language than poetry, and this construction of the infinitive in apposition was a decidedly indirect, though natural, mode of expression. In any case, the infinitive in this use is either pure or has *de* to introduce it (there being about twice as many without preposition as with *de*). Of those with *de*, a majority come from the *Crónica*. Only one case is noted in the *Cid*, and that is mentioned by Menéndez Pidal:<sup>1</sup>

lo quel rogava Alfons el de León  
de dar sues fijas a ifantes de Carrión *Cid* 1928

Other illustrations of the appositional type follow:

lo que era peor de todo, uenir los dAffrica a Roma, e parar  
azes ante la cibdat, e la sangre de los romanos seer esparzida  
por los sus terminos *Cron* 45a49

<sup>1</sup> *Cid*, § 161, 1.

ca esto era cosa que contecie muchas uezes en guerra: uencer los unos, e depues cobrar los otros, e seer aquellos uençudos: e aquellos que una sazón fueran sennores e onrados, uenir depues en seruidumbre y en desonra, e seer los otros sennores dellos; y esto era cosa natural que fuera siempre en el mundo e serie *Cron* 46b31

uusco esta otra carrera: de aluoroçar el pueblo contra el *Cron* 83a48

Pero a los que buenos salien, fazien les esta gracia de poner los otra uez por consules *Cron* 85b14

fizo el solo sin ayuda dotri lo que no sabien a otro omne fazer fasta aquella sazón, de matar ninguno en so cabo elephant *Cron* 90a28.

Esto es sine dubio cosa bien ordenada,  
oir primera mientre la liçon consegada,  
monstrar la con sus lenguas que es fe acabada,  
desen comprir la obrar, offereçer la obrada *Sac* 56

ca dezir de la lengua, de manos non laurar  
esso es flor sin frucho, prometer e non dar *Sac* 181

non lo tengo por seso averes tan granados,  
meterlo a aventura a vn dicho de dados *Aliz* 908

como ha de seyer quierouos lo dezir,  
çercarlos en medio . . . *Aliz* 966

Lo que Dario asmaua en medio lo çercar *Aliz* 996

De seer en la cathedra que tu estás posado  
Al tu cuerpo sennero es esto condonado *Mil* 64

Prisieron un conseio . . . Tornar enna Gloriosa que los façie arder *Mil* 388

mas dezir « Non lo quiero » tenialo por peccado *SDom* 122

Asmo vn buen conseio, essa fardida lança,  
traherlos a Sant Pedro *SDom* 264

Prisieron vn conseio . . . aduzir el enfermo *SDom* 542

Señor, sy Dios lo querie, tal es mj uoluntad,  
prender orden e uelo, beujr en castidad,  
en vn rencon çerrada yazer en pobredat,  
beujr de lo que diere por Dios la Christiandat *SDom* 322

Lo que el Padre sancto cobdiçiaua ueer,  
exir deste mal sieglo, enel bueno caer,  
de todo su lazerio el gualardon prender *SDom* 488

ca temja lo que era, ueer grant amargura *SDom* 517

metieron se aello de muy buen taliento,  
rogar aDios quel diesse salut eguarimiento *SDom* 615

Asmaron un conseio, de Dios fue enbiado,  
leuarlo al sepulcro del buen escapulado *SDom* 630

Siempre cobdiçie esto, e aun lo cobdiçio,  
apartarme del mundo, de todo su bolliçio,  
beuir solo en regla, morar entu serujio *SDom* 100

Sennor, si tu quisiesses, yo mucho lo querria,  
De vevir solitario commo vevir solia *SMill* 105

Avielo en costumne el santo confessor,  
Non fablar con ninguno, nin exir a labor *SMill* 143

Asmó un buen conseio el varon don Onorio,  
Venir en romeria al sancto oratorio,  
Pregar al cuerpo sancto padron del territorio *SMill* 186

Si a vos semeiasse, nuestro seso tal era,  
Ir sobre leoneses luego de la primera,  
Quebrantar a Remiro, tollerlo de carrera *SMill* 407

El rey . . . Afinó un buen conseio . . .  
Pagar a Santiago por alguna mesura,  
Tornarlo de sue part en esta lit tan dura *SMill* 420

Pero en una cosa era yo acordado,  
Si a vos semeiasse conseio aguisado,  
Prometer al apostolo un voto mesurado *SMill* 422

mas diria vn seso, sy a todos plaçiese,  
de dar salto en ellos *Alix* 1297

Non es pora buen rrey tal cosa fazedera,  
podiendo entrar dentro, de sallir contra fuera *Alix* 2206

auie esta manera el rey de grant coraje  
tomarles poca rrienta syl fazien omenaje *Alix* 2484

. . . Que gelo condonase . . . De fincar con Voxmea *Soria* 100  
qual serie mejor: de seruir a moros o a cristianos *Cron* 557b10

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- El libro de Alizandre*, manuscrit esp. 488 de la Bibliothèque nationale de Paris, publié par Alfred Morel-Fatio. Dresden, Gesellschaft für romanische Literatur, 1906. *Aliz*.
- Archiv für lateinische Lexicographie und Grammatik*, herausgegeben von Eduard Wölfflin. Leipzig 1884-1908.
- BEARDSLEY, W. A.: *Assumir or a sumir in Berceo's Sacrificio*, quatrain 285. *Romanic Review*, vol. VII, p. 226.
- BELLO, ANDRÉS: *Gramática de la Lengua Castellana*. 17. ed. . . . notas é índices de D. Rufino José Cuervo. París 1914.
- BRUGMANN, KARL: *Elements of the Comparative Grammar of the Indo-Germanic Languages*. 4 vols. Strassburg 1888-1895.
- Bulletin Hispanique*, paraissant tous les trois mois sous la direction des Universités de Bordeaux et de Toulouse.
- CEJADOR Y FRAUCA, JULIO: *La Lengua de Cervantes*. Madrid 1905-1906.
- CORNU, J.: *Études sur le Poème du Cid*. Romania X, p. 94.
- CORNU, J.: *Recherches sur la conjugaison espagnole au XIII<sup>e</sup> et XIV<sup>e</sup> siècle*. Miscellanea di filologia e linguistica, Firenze 1886.
- CUERVO, R. J.: *Diccionario de Construcción y de Régimen de la Lengua Castellana*. Paris 1886, 1893.
- DIEZ, FRIEDRICH C.: *Grammaire des Langues Romanes*. 3. éd., refondue et augmentée. 3 vols. Paris 1874-1876. Translated from the German by Auguste Brachet, Gaston Paris and Morel-Fatio.
- DITTES, R.: *Über den Gebrauch des Infinitivs im Altprovenzalischen*. Romanische Forschungen, XV.
- FITZ-GERALD, JOHN D.: *La Vida de Santo Domingo de Silos par Gonzalo de Berceo*, édition critique. Paris 1904. *SDom*.
- FITZ-GERALD, JOHN D.: *Versification of the "cuaderna via" as found in Berceo's Vida de Santo Domingo de Silos*. New York, Columbia University Press, 1905.
- FÖRSTER, PAUL: *Spanische Sprachlehre*. Berlin 1880.
- GRANDGENT, C. H.: *An Introduction to Vulgar Latin*. Boston 1907.
- HANSEN, F.: *Gramática Histórica de la Lengua Castellana*. Halle a. S. 1913.
- HUNTINGTON, ARCHER M.: *Poem of the Cid*. 3 vols. Hispanic Society of America, 1908.

JANER, FLORENCIO: *Poetas castellanos anteriores al siglo XV*. Colección hecha por D. Tomas Antonio Sanchez, continuada por el Excmo. Sr. D. Pedro José Pidal, y considerablemente aumentada é ilustrada á vista de los códices y manuscritos antiguos. Vol. 57 of the Biblioteca de Autores Españoles. Madrid 1864-.

*Poema del Cid*. Cid.

Poetas de Gonzalo de Berceo:

*La Vida del glorioso confesor Sancto Domingo de Silos*. SDom.

*La estoria de Sennor Sant Millan*. SMill.

*Del sacrificio de la missa*. Sac.

*Martyrio de Sant Laurencio*. SLaur.

*Loores de Nuestra Sennora*. Loor.

*De los Signos que aparesceran ante del Juicio*. Sig.

*Milagros de Nuestra Sennora*. Mil.

*El Duelo que fizo la Virgen Maria el Dia de la Pasion de su Fijo Jesu Christo*. Duelo.

*Vida de Sancta Oria, Virgen*. SOria.

*El Libro de Alexandre*. Alex.

KJELLMAN, HILDING: *La construction de l'infinifit dépendant d'une locution impersonnelle des origines au XV<sup>e</sup> siècle*. Upsal 1913.

*Kritischer Jahresbericht über die Fortschritte der romanischen Philologie*, herausgegeben von Karl Vollmöller. München 1892-.

LACHMUND, A.: *Über den Gebrauch des reinen und präpositionalen Infinitives im Altfranzösischen*. Schwerin, 1875?. Rostock Univ. Diss. (Germ.)

LANCHETAS, R.: *Gramática y Vocabulario de las Obras de Gonzalo de Berceo*. Madrid 1900.

LENZ, RODOLFO: *La Oración y sus Partes*. Madrid 1920.

LUKER, BENJAMIN F.: *The Use of the Infinitive instead of a Finite Verb in French*. Columbia University Press, 1916.

*Mélanges Julien Havel*, recueil de travaux d'érudition dédiés à la mémoire de Julien Havet. Paris 1895.

MENÉNDEZ PIDAL, RAMÓN: *Cantar de mio Cid*. 3 vols. Madrid 1908-1911. Vol. I, *Crítica del Texto y Gramática*; Vol. II, *Vocabulario*; Vol. III, *Texto*. Cid.

MENÉNDEZ PIDAL, RAMÓN: *Manual Elemental de Gramática Histórica Española*. 3. ed. Madrid 1914.

MENÉNDEZ PIDAL, RAMÓN: *Primera Crónica General que mandó componer Alfonso el Sabio*, etc. Madrid 1906. Cron.

MEYER-LÜBKE, WILHELM: *Grammaire des Langues Romanes*. Paris 1890-1906. Vol. III, *Syntaxe*, traduction par A. et G. Doutrepoint.

*Modern Language Notes*, issued by members of the Modern Language departments of Johns Hopkins University. Jan. 1886-.

*Modern Philology*. The University of Chicago Press, 1903-.

- MULLER, HENRI F.: *Origine et Histoire de la Préposition à dans les Locutions du Type de faire faire quelque chose à quelqu'un*. Poitiers 1912 (Columbia University Dissertation).
- OTTO, RICHARD: *Der portugiesische Infinitiv bei Camões*. Romanische Forschungen, vol. VI, 1889.
- Revue Hispanique*, recueil consacré à l'étude des langues . . . des pays castillans, catalans et portugais. Paris 1894-.
- Romania*, recueil trimestriel . . . publié par P. Meyer et Gaston Paris. Paris 1872.
- Romanic Review*, a quarterly journal devoted to research . . . in the field of the Romance languages and literatures. Henry Alfred Todd and Raymond Weeks, editors.
- Romanische Forschungen*, Organ für romanische Sprachen und Mittellatein. Herausgegeben von Karl Vollmöller. Erlangen 1883.
- SOLALINDE, ANTONIO G.: *El Sacrificio de la Misa*. Madrid 1913.
- TOBLER, ADOLF: *Vermischte Beiträge zur französischen Grammatik*. . . . Leipzig 1894-1902. 5 vols.
- WEIGERT, L.: *Untersuchungen zur spanischen Syntax*. Berlin 1907.
- WIGGERS, J.: *Grammatik der spanischen Sprache*. 2. ed. Leipzig 1884.
- ZAUNER, A.: *Altspanisches Elementarbuch*. Heidelberg 1908.
- Zeitschrift für romanische Philologie*, begründet von Prof. Dr. Gustav Gröber. Halle a. S.



# INDEX<sup>1</sup>

- a-infinitive, as subject, 153
  - development of, 150-153
  - with *auer*, *ser*, 179-189
  - with intransitive verbs of motion, 159-168
  - with reflexive verbs, 168-174
  - with transitive verbs, 174-179
- abaxarse*, *por*, 208
- abondar*, *pure*, 18, 102
- aborreçer*, *de*, 108
- Absorption of *a*, 25, 51-52, 78, 82, 83, 111, 183-186
- acabar*, *de*, 108
- acaesçer*, *pure*, 102
- açerca*, *de*, 250
- acojerse*, *a*, 169
- aconsejado*, *por*, 197
- acordado*, *en*, 241
  - por*, 197
- acordar*, *de*, 108
  - en*, 243
- acordarse*, *a*, 169
  - de*, 108
  - en*, 247
  - por*, 208
- acuçioso*, *pora*, 222
- adebdado*, *de*, 144
  - por*, 197
- adelantarse*, *pure*, 84
- adelinar*, *a*, 159
- ademas*, *de*, 250
- adenodado*, *por*, 197
- Adjectives, with *de*, 143
  - with *en*, 238, 239-241
  - with *para*, 235
  - with *por*, 194-199
  - with *pora*, 222-225
- adobado*, *pora*, 224
- adobar*, *de*, 136
  - por*, 202
- adobarse*, *por*, 208
- aduxir*, *a*, 174
- afuera(s)*, *de*, 253
- aguizado*, *de*, 144
  - por*, 197
- aguisar*, *por*, 200, 202
  - pora*, 230
- aguisarse*, *pora*, 228
- ayudar*, *a*, 175
  - pure*, 82
- ajuntar*, *subst.*, 4
- ayuntarse*, *a*, 170
  - por*, 208
  - pora*, 229
- al*, *temporal*, 4, 11, 12
- alabarse*, *de*, 131
- alcançar*, *a*, 154
- aluoroçarse*, *por*, 208
- amar*, *pure*, 43
- amenazar*, *de*, 137
- (*a*) *menos*, *de*, 250
- amolado*, *pora*, 224

<sup>1</sup> It has not been thought necessary to indicate for all words the orthographical variants most usual in Old Spanish texts: ç and z; i, j and y; u and v; nn and ñ, etc. The forms cited herewith are taken from the texts themselves; hence are not necessarily valid for the whole of the Old Spanish field.



- andar, a, 160  
   en, 244  
   por, 204  
   subst., 3, 4, 7  
 antes que, pure, 251  
 aparecido, por, 197  
 aparejado, de, 144  
   por, 197  
   pora, 224  
 aparellado, pora, 224  
 apartarse, a, 169  
   para, 237  
 aplazar, pora, 230  
 Apposition, infinitive in, 261-264  
 aprender, a, 154  
   de, 108  
 apres(s)urarse, a, 169  
   de, 108  
 ardiente, en, 240  
 armado, pora, 224  
 armarse, por, 208  
 armas, de, 139  
 asaborgado, por, 198  
 asmar, de, 109  
   pure, 45  
 aspero, de, 144  
 assacar, de, 109  
 assentarse, a, 170  
 atender, pure, 51  
 atreuerse, a, 170  
   de, 109  
   en, 248  
   pure, 51  
 atreuudo, de, 144  
 avenir, a, 160  
 auenturarse, de, 110  
 auer, a, 179  
   de, 105, 189  
   pora, 231  
   pure, 22, 23, 24, etc.  
   subst., 3, 4, 6, 7  
 auer acuerdo, de, 139  
 auer cobdicia, pure, 44  
   de, 139  
 auer deseo, de, 139-140  
 auer entencion, de, 140  
 auer- locutions, special, with de,  
   124-126  
   a coraçon, 125  
   en costumbre, 125  
   en uso, 126  
   en voluntad, 126  
   por costumbre, 126  
 auer mester, pure, 51  
 auer pro, pure, 102  
 auer sabor, de, 142  
 auer uagar, de, 142  
 auer uerguença, pure, 132  
   de, 131  
 auiuado, en, 241  
   por, 198  
   pora, 224  
 bestia, pora, 221  
 beuer, subst., 2, 3, 4, 8  
 (bien) andante, en, 240  
 bolliço, de, 139  
 braueza, de, 139  
 brauo, de, 144  
 bueno, de, 144  
   para, 236  
   por, 195  
   pora, 223  
 buscar, de, 110  
   pora, 230  
 caer, pure, 19  
 caler, pure, 17, 19  
 cans(s)ar, de, 132  
 cantar, subst., 4, 6, 8  
 caro, de, 145  
 carrera, de, 139  
 castigarse, de, 132  
 catar, por, 200  
 caualgar, a, 160  
   pora, 226  
   subst., 4  
 çerca, de, 250

- çertero, de, 145  
   en, 240  
 çes(s)ar, de, 110  
   pure, 51  
 ciência, de, 139  
 cierto, de, 145  
 claro, para, 236  
 Clause, dependence of infinitive on,  
   a, 159  
   para, 235  
   por, 209-210  
   pora, 233-234  
   pure, 75  
 cobdiçar, a, 154  
   de, 110  
   por, 200  
   pure, 13, 43  
 cobdiçioso, de, 145  
 cogerse, a, 171  
 coydar, see cuydar  
 combidar, por, 202  
 començar, a, 155  
   de, 110  
   pure, 13, 51  
 comendar, pure, 73  
 comer, subst., 5, 6, 7, 8  
 cometer, a, 155  
   subst., 5  
 com(m)o, cuemo, a, 252  
   causal, 91  
   comparative, 91  
 complido, en, 241  
 conpeçar, a, 156  
   de, 112  
 conseio, de, 139  
 consentir, de, 129  
   en, 244  
   pure, 73  
 contender, de, 113  
   en, 244  
   por, 205  
   pora, 226  
 Contractions, in future tense, 29  
 contrario, de, 145  
 conueniente, pora, 223  
 conuenir a, 153  
   de, 10  
   pure, 17, 19  
 correr, por, 205  
   subst., 3, 5  
 crescer, en, 244  
 crudo, en, 240  
 cuemo, see com(m)o  
 cuydar (coy-, cue-), de, 113  
   en, 244  
   pure, 46  
 cuydar and pensar compared, 46, 48  
 cuytado, por, 198  
 cuytarse, a, 171  
 cumprir, de, 113  
   pure, 102  
 curiar, de, 133  
  
 dado, pora, 225  
 dar, a, 175  
   de, 113  
   pora, 231  
   subst., 5  
 dar pena, de, 137  
 darse, a, 171  
 darse uagar, en, 248  
 dardos, de, 139  
 de-infinitive, as object, 106-124  
   as predicate noun, 105  
   as subject with impersonal verbs,  
     101-104  
   as subject with ser and adjective  
     or adverb, 99-100  
   as subject with ser and substan-  
     tive, 100-101  
   of cause, 131-133  
   of means, 136-137  
   of origin, 106  
   of separation, 133-136  
   with adjectives, 143-150  
   with lexar, etc., 129-131  
   with substantives, 137-142  
   with verb locutions, 124-128

- delantero, de, 145  
 delectarse, en, 248  
 delectoso, de, 145  
 deleytarse, en, 248  
 demandado, por, 198  
 demetido, por, 198  
 denegar, de, 114  
 dennar, pure, 47  
 denedado, por, 198  
     pora, 225  
 dereçer, pure, 82  
 derecho, de, 145  
 derranc(h)ar, a, 160  
 desamparar, de, 114  
 desauenido, en, 241  
 de(s)çender, a, 160  
     pure, 75  
 desesperado, de, 146  
     pora, 225  
 desesperar, de, 132  
 despertar, de, 133  
 dessear, pure, 44  
 desuergonçamiento, de, 140  
 desuiarse, de, 133  
 detardarse, de, 133  
 deuer, a, 156  
     pure, 22, 30  
 dexar (-ss-), a, 156-157; de, 114  
     por, 200  
     pure, 22, 30, 63-65  
 dia, de, 140  
 digno, de, 146  
     por, 195  
 disputar, subst., 5  
 do, don, pure, 92  
     a don, 92  
     por do, 92  
 doler, de, 102  
     pure, 19  
 dolerse, de, 132  
 dormir, subst., 5  
 dubdar, de, 115  
     en, 245  
     pure, 49  
 du(e)cho, de, 146  
 duelo, de, 140  
 dulce, de, 146  
 duro, de, 146  
  
 echarse, a, 171  
 edad, edat, de, 140  
     pora, 221  
 emb-, see enb-  
 emp-, see emp-  
 en-infinitive, discussion of, 238-239  
     with adjectives, 239-241  
     with meter, poner, 242  
     with reflexive verbs, 247-249  
     with verbs not having object,  
         243-247  
 enantes, de, 251  
 enbiar, embiar, enuiar, a, 177  
     por, 202  
     pora, 231  
     pure, 82-83  
 enchir, pure, 19  
 endere(s)çar, a, 176  
     por, 205  
     pora, 226  
 endiablado, por, 198  
 endurar, por, 200  
 engannado, en, 241  
 en guisa, de, 252  
 en logar, de, 252  
 enoiado, de, 142  
 en(n)oiarse, de, 132  
 enoio, de, 140  
 enpeçar, empeçar, a, 157  
     de, 115  
     pure, 52  
 en quanto, en, 252  
 ensayar, de, 115  
     pure, 52  
 ensennar, a, 158  
 entender, a, 158  
     en, 245  
 entrar, a, 160  
     pure, 75

- entrar en voluntad, de, 102  
 en uez, de, 252  
 es bien, etc., pure, 15  
 escalentarse, por, 208  
 escoger, de, 116  
     por, 202  
 escoger por mejor, de, 126  
 escollido, por, 198  
 escuela, de, 140  
 escusar(se), de, 133-134  
 esforçarse, a, 172; de, 116  
     pora, 229  
 esperar, sperar, pure, 49  
 estableçer, de, 116  
 estar, en, 245  
     por, 212  
     pora, 231-232  
     subst., 7, 8  
 Ethical dative with *temer*, 49, 50,  
     123  
 exir, pure, 76  
  
 falar, subst., 5  
 Factive verbs, pure, 55-69  
 fallar por bien, de, 126  
 fallarse, en, 248  
 fallarse mal, de, 132  
 falleçer, de, 116  
 fartarse, de, 137  
 fascas, 253  
 fasta, 253  
 fazendado, por, 198  
 fazer, far, fer, pure, 55-62  
     subst., 8  
 fazer paramiento, de, 141  
 fecho, de, 140  
 feduzado, de, 146  
 ferir, subst., 3, 5, 7  
 fermoso, de, 146  
 feuzo, de, 140  
 feuzante, de, 146  
 fijas de casar, 140  
 finar, de, 116  
 fincar, de, 116  
     fincar, por, 213  
     pora, 232  
 firme, por, 195  
 flaco, en, 240  
 franque, en, 240  
 fuera(s) de, 253  
 fuerte, de, 147  
 fuyr, subst., 5  
 Future tense, formation of, 23-24  
 Futurity in *por*-infinitive, 211-212  
  
 gana, de, 140  
 goloso, por, 195  
 gozar, pure, 44  
 gozarse, de, 137  
 gradar, pure, 44  
 granado, en, 241  
 grande, por, 195  
 graue, de, 147  
 grieue, de, 147  
 guardar(se), de, 134  
 guarnido, pora, 225  
 guiar, pure, 83  
 guisa, de, 141  
 guisado, de, 147  
     por, 198  
     pora, 225  
 guisar, pora, 231  
     pure, 53  
 guisarse, de, 103  
     para, 237  
     por, 208  
     pora, 229  
  
 iantar (y-), subst., 6, 7, 8  
 yazer, por, 214  
     subst., 9  
 Impersonal verbs, with infinitive-  
     subject: a, 153  
     de, 101-104  
     pure, 17-20  
 Infinitive, origin and growth of, 1-3  
 prepositional, *see* individual prep-  
     ositions

- Infinitive, substantival, *see* sub-  
     stantive, etc.  
 Intrusive no(n), 93, 95, 96  
 yr, a, 161  
     para, 236  
     por, 205  
     pora, 227  
     pure, 76-78  
 ire and venire, pure, 74  
 issir, a, 163  
     por, 20  
 judgar, de, 117  
     por, 203  
 judgar por guisado, de, 126  
 juntarse, por, 209  
 yurar, de, 131  
     por, 201
- lazdrar, en, 245  
 leuantarse, a, 172  
     de, 134  
     por, 209  
     pora, 229  
     pure, 84  
 leuar, a, 177  
 leuar en coraçon, de, 126  
 lexar, de, 130  
 lexar and dexar, pure, 74  
 lydiar, subst., 5  
 ligero, de, 147  
     para, 236  
 liulano, de, 148  
     pora, 223  
 llegar, a, 163  
     pure, 78  
 llegar and uniar compared, 78, 80  
 logar, pora, 222  
 Luker's theory of historical in-  
     finitive, 85  
 lumbré, de, 141
- maestro, de, 148  
 malo, de, 148
- manar, subst., 5  
 mandar, de, 114  
     pure, 65-68  
     subst., 9  
 manera, de, 141  
 maniar, subst., 9  
     (plural), 6  
 melhor, para, 236  
 menazarse, de, 137  
 menguar, pora, 232  
 menos, de, 250  
 merescer, a, 158; de, 117  
     pure, 53  
 meter, a, 178  
 meter en coraçon, de, 127  
 meter locutions with en-infinitive,  
     242:  
         meter cura  
         meter femência  
         meter mano  
         meter mientes  
         meter mission  
         meter voluntad  
 meter locutions with por-infinitive,  
     203:  
         meter corazon  
         meter estudio  
         meter poder  
         meter voluntad  
 meterse, a, 172  
 mingua, de, 141  
 minguar, subst., 5  
 Modal auxiliaries, 21-42  
 morir, por, 206  
     subst., 3, 5, 7  
 mostrar, a, 178  
 mouer, a, 163, 178  
     pora, 227  
     pure, 83  
     subst., 5  
 mouerse, a, 172  
     pora, 229  
 mouido, por, 198  
     pora, 225

- Muller's theory of the *faire faire* construction, 55-58
- na(s)çer, por**, 206  
subst., 5
- Necessity vs. futurity in *auer* with infinitive: **a**, 179-183  
pure, 26, 27
- ninno, pora**, 222
- noble, pora**, 223
- o, on, pure**, 92  
por **o**, 92
- oyr, pure**, 69-70  
subst., 5
- oluidarse, pure**, 19
- omnes, de**, 141
- ora, de**, 141
- ordenar, de**, 130
- osado, de**, 148  
por, 198
- osar, pure**, 53
- otorgar, de**, 130
- pagado, por**, 198
- pagarse, de**, 137
- para-infinitive**, discussion of, 234-235  
with adjectives, 235-236  
with intransitive verbs of motion, 236  
with reflexive verbs, 236-237  
with transitive verbs, 237-238
- parado, pora**, 225
- parar, para**, 238  
pora, 231
- pararse, a**, 173  
pora, 229
- paresçer, de**, 103  
subst., 9
- partirse, de**, 134  
pora, 229
- pas(s)ar, a**, 163  
pora, 227  
pure, 79
- Passive sense in infinitive, 2, 58, 63, 66, 143, 176, 177, 202
- pedir, a**, 178  
por, 200  
subst., 5
- pensado, de**, 149
- pens(s)ar, de**, 117-120; **a**, 158  
por, 201  
pure, 48-49
- periglo, de**, 141
- pertenesçer, de**, 103  
pure, 17, 19
- pesado, de**, 149
- pesar, de**, 103  
en, 245  
subst., 3, 5, 6, 7, 9
- piadoso, en**, 241
- plazentero, por**, 195
- plazer, de**, 103  
pure, 19  
subst., 3, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9
- pleytear, de**, 120
- poder, pure**, 22, 23, 33-34  
subst., 3, 5, 6, 7, 10
- poner, a**, 178  
de, 120  
por, 201
- poner femença, en**, 242
- por-infinitive**, as object, 199-201  
causal, 216-218  
concessive, 219-220  
depending on clause, 209-211  
development of construction, 192-193  
expressing futurity, 211-214  
expressing possibility, 213  
independent, 214-216  
instrumental, 219  
with adjectives, 194-199  
with intransitive verbs of motion, 203-207  
with reflexive verbs, 207-209  
with substantives, 193-194  
with transitive verbs, 201-203

- por and *pora* replacing indirect object construction, 17  
*pora*-infinitive, depending on clause, 233-234  
     development of construction, 220-221  
     expressing characteristic, 221, 222  
     with adjectives, 222-225  
     with *auer*, *ser*, 231-233  
     with intransitive verbs of motion, 225-228  
     with reflexive verbs, 228-230  
     with substantives, 221-222  
     with transitive verbs, 230-231  
*por andar*, temporal, 216  
*por razon*, *de*, 253  
*por tal*, *de*, 253  
*posar*, subst., 5  
*preçiar-se*, *de*, 132  
     *en*, 248  
 Predicate noun, infinitive *as*, 20, 105  
*presto*, *por*, 195  
     *pora*, 223  
*priessa*, *de*, 141  
*prometer*, *de*, 130  
     *por*, 203  
*prouar*, *de*, 121  
*puiar*, *a*, 164; *por*, 206  
*punnar*, *de*, 121  
     *en*, 245  
 Pure infinitive, verbal, *as* object, 21-74  
     *as* predicate noun, 20-21  
     *as* subject, 14-21  
     description of, 13-14  
     independent, 84-86  
     with *fazer*, *dexar*, *mandar*, 55-69  
     with impersonal verbs, 17-20  
     with *ser* and adjective or adverb, 15  
     with *ser* and substantive, 16-17  
     with verbs of mental processes, 44-50  
     with verbs of motion, intransitive, 75-81  
         reflexive, 84  
         transitive, 81-83  
     with verbs of sense perception, 69-73  
     with verbs of wishing, 42-44  
*qual* and *que*, adjectival, pure, 93  
*que*, comparative, pure, 93  
     with *querer*, 94  
     with *ualer*, 95  
     with other verbs, 96  
*que*, relative and interrogative, pure, 87-91  
     with *auer*, 88  
     with *fallar*, 88  
     with *saber*, 88  
     with *ser*, 89  
     with *tener*, 89  
     with *ver*, 89  
     *a que*, 90  
     *con que*, 90  
     *de que*, 90  
     *en que*, 90  
     *por que*, 91  
     *sobre que*, 91  
*quedar*, *de*, 121  
*querer*, *de*, 39, 108  
     inceptive, 35  
     pure, 22, 23, 34-40  
     replacing regular future, 37  
     subst., 10  
*qui*, pure, 92  
     *con qui*, 92  
*quien*, pure, 93  
     *a quien*, 93  
     *con quien*, 93  
*quieras*, pure, compared with  
     *veuillez*, 36  
*quitar-se*, *de*, 135  
*rrancar*, *de*, 135  
*razon*, *de*, 142

- re(s)cebir, para, 238**  
**rreçelador, de, 149**  
**regnar, subst., 10**  
 Relative and interrogative pro-  
   nouns, pure, 86  
 Relative de, 97-99, 106-107, 135  
**respirar, subst., 10**  
**retenerse, de, 135**
- saber and poder compared, 40-41**  
**saber, pure, 22, 23, 40-41**  
   subst., 3, 5, 6, 10  
**sabidor, de, 149**  
   en, 241  
**sabio, en, 241; pora, 223**  
**saborgado, por, 199**  
**sabroso, de, 149; por, 195**  
**sal(l)ir, a, 164; pora, 227**  
   pure, 79  
   subst., 4  
**salir rescebir, 79**  
**saluo, de, 254**  
**sano, pora, 223**  
**segudar, subst., 5**  
**seguro, de, 149**  
   pora, 223  
**semeiança, de, 142**  
**semeiar (-jar), de, 103**  
   pure, 19  
   subst., 10  
**ser, seer, a, 190**  
   de, 105-106  
   en, 246  
   por, 214  
   pora, 232  
   subst., 10  
**ser mala cosa, etc., pure, 16**  
**ser menester, de, 104**  
   mester, de, 104  
**ser poderoso, de, 149**  
**ser uebos, pure, 19**  
**sesudo, pora, 223**  
**signar, subst., 5**
- sin-infinitive, 254**  
**sobeio, en, 241**  
**sobre-infinitive, 255**  
**sobre razon, de, 255**  
**sof(f)rido, en, 241**  
   pora, 225  
**soler, pure, 22, 23, 42**  
**soler and usar compared, 42**  
**sotil, en, 241**  
   pora, 223  
**Split future, 27-30**  
**subir, a, 165**  
 Subject, infinitive as, (pure), 14-20;  
   (de), 99-104; (a), 153  
   infinitive with, 256  
 Subject-infinitive with subject, 16  
 Substantive, infinitive as, 1-12  
   expressing activity, 3, 7  
   in plural, 5-6  
   unmodified, etc., 3-5  
   variously modified, 7-10  
   with object, 12  
   with objective genitive, 11-12  
   with subjective genitive, 10-11  
 Substantives, with de-infinitive,  
   137-142  
   por, 193-194  
   pora, 221-222  
**sufrir, pure, 74**
- tal, para, 236**  
   por, 195  
**tan, por, 195**  
**tardar, en, 246**  
**tarde, pora, 223**  
**temer, de, 122**  
   pure, 50  
**tener, pora, 231**  
**tener locutions, de, 124, 127-128**  
   en coração, 127  
   en voluntad, 127  
   por bien, 127  
   por dura cosa, 128



- tener** locutions, (por) **guisado**, 128  
     por mal, 128  
     por melhor, 128  
     pro, 104  
**tener** oio, **para**, 238  
**tenerse**, de, 135  
**tenudo**, de, 150  
**tiempo**, de, 142  
**tierno**, **pora**, 223  
**tomar en uso**, de, 128  
**tomarse**, a, 173  
**tornar**, a, 165, 179  
     de, 135  
     en, 246  
     iterative, 79, 80, 165-166, 227, 246  
     **pora**, 227  
     pure, 79  
**tornarse**, a, 173  
     de, 135  
     **para**, 237  
     **pora**, 230  
**trabaiar**, en, 247  
**trabaiarse**, de, 123  
     en, 248  
     por, 209  
     pure, 84  
**trabalioso**, de, 150  
**trametido**, por, 199  
**tratar**, de, 123  
**treuerse**, a, 174  
     pure, 54  
  
**uagar** (v-), pure, 20  
     subst., 7, 10  
**uagroso**, en, 241  
**ualer** (v-), en, 247  
     in comparative phrases, 220  
     pure, 20  
**valiente**, **pora**, 224  
**vedar**, pure, 74  
**velar**, subst., 6, 10  
**venido** (u-), por, 199  
     with **ser**, forming perfect, 199  
  
**venir** (u-), a, 167-168  
     de, 136  
     por, 206  
     **pora**, 228  
     pure, 14, 80  
**venir** locutions, de, 104:  
     a (en) **coraçon**  
     a **punto**  
     a **talent**  
     a **vision**  
     a **voluntat**  
**venir** and **yr** compared, 81  
**ver**, **veer**, **veder**, (u-), pure, 70-72  
     with one object, 70  
     with two objects, 72  
**Verbs of motion**, intransitive, a,  
     159-168  
     **para**, 236  
     por, 203-207  
     **pora**, 225-228  
     pure, 74-81  
     reflexive, a, 168-174  
         **para**, 236-237  
         por, 207-209  
         **pora**, 228-230  
         pure, 84  
     transitive, a, 174-179  
         **para**, 237-238  
         por, 201-203  
         **pora**, 230-231  
         pure, 81-83  
**Verbs of permitting**, etc., de, 129-131  
     pure, 73-74  
**Verbs of sense perception**, pure,  
     69-73  
**Verbs of thinking**, etc., pure, 44-50  
**Verbs of wishing**, etc., pure, 42-44  
**versificar**, subst., 10  
**vezarse**, a, 174  
     pure, 84  
**uieio**, **pora**, 224  
**vozero**, de, 150

husar, de, 116  
usar, de, 124  
  pure, 54  
uso, de, 142

(h)uuiar, vuiar, a, 167  
  pure, 80

Weakening of fazer, yr, mandar,  
  pensar, querer, tornar, 37, 76,  
  118, 135



**COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY STUDIES IN ROMANCE  
PHILOLOGY AND LITERATURE**

EDITED BY HENRY ALFRED TODD AND RAYMOND WEEKS

- 
- FRÉDÉRIC MISTRAL, POET AND LEADER IN PROVENÇE.** By Charles Alfred Downer, Ph.D. 12mo, cloth, pp. x + 267. \$2.00 *net*.
- CORNEILLE AND THE SPANISH DRAMA.** By J. B. Segall, Ph.D. 12mo, cloth, pp. ix + 147. \$1.75 *net*.
- DANTE AND THE ANIMAL KINGDOM.** By Richard Thayer Holbrook, Ph.D. 12mo, cloth, pp. xviii + 376. Illustrated. \$2.50 *net*.
- THE INDEBTEDNESS OF CHAUCER'S TROILUS AND CRISEYDE TO GUIDO DELLE COLONNE'S HISTORIA TROJANA.** By George L. Hamilton, A.M. 12mo, cloth, pp. vi + 159. \$1.50 *net*.
- THE ANGLO-NORMAN DIALECT.** A Manual of its Phonology and Morphology, with illustrative specimens of the literature. By Louis Emil Menger, Ph.D. 8vo, cloth, pp. xx + 167. \$1.75 *net*.
- CORNEILLE AND RACINE IN ENGLAND.** A study of the English Translations of the Corneilles and Racine, with special reference to their representation on the English stage. By Dorothea Frances Canfield, Ph.D. 12mo, cloth, pp. xiii + 295. \$2.00 *net*.
- THE VERSIFICATION OF THE CUADERNA VIA,** as found in Berceo's Vida de Santo Domingo de Silos. By John Driscoll Fitz-Gerald, Ph.D. 8vo, pp. xiii + 112. Facsimiles. Paper, \$1.25 *net*; cloth, \$1.50 *net*.
- PIERRE LE TOURNEUR.** By Mary Gertrude Cushing, Ph.D. 12mo, cloth, pp. xi + 317. \$2.00 *net*.
- THE DEVELOPMENT OF STAGE DECORATION IN FRANCE IN THE MIDDLE AGES.** By Donald Clive Stuart, Ph.D. 12mo, cloth, pp. ix + 230. \$1.75 *net*.
- CHARLES DE SAINTE-MARTHE.** By Caroline Ruutz-Rees, Ph.D. 12mo, cloth, pp. xvi + 664. \$2.25 *net*.
- THE SYMBOLISM OF VOLTAIRE'S NOVELS,** with special reference to Zadig. By William Raleigh Price, Ph.D. 12mo, cloth, pp. vi + 269. \$1.75 *net*.
- PARTICIPIAL SUBSTANTIVES OF THE -ATA TYPE IN THE ROMANCE LANGUAGES,** with special reference to French. By Luther Herbert Alexander, Ph.D. 8vo, pp. xii + 163. Paper, \$1.50 *net*; cloth, \$1.75 *net*.
- 

**COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY PRESS**

LEMCKE & BUECHNER, Agents, 30-32 East 20th St., New York

**COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY STUDIES IN ROMANCE  
PHILOLOGY AND LITERATURE**

EDITED BY HENRY ALFRED TODD AND RAYMOND WEEKS

**UNCLE AND NEPHEW IN THE OLD FRENCH CHANSONS DE GESTE.** A Study in the Survival of Matriarchy. By WILLIAM OLIVER FARNSWORTH, Ph.D. 8vo, cloth, pp. xii + 267. Price, \$2.00 *net*.

**DIDEROT AS A DISCIPLE OF ENGLISH THOUGHT.** By R. LOYALTY CRU, Ph.D. 12mo, cloth, pp. xiii + 498. Price, \$2.25 *net*.

**LI ROMANS DOU LIS.** By FREDERICK C. OSTRANDER, Ph.D. In Memoriam. 8vo, cloth, pp. vii + 154. Price, \$1.75 *net*.

**EUROPEAN CHARACTERS IN FRENCH DRAMA OF THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY.** By HARRY KURZ, Ph.D. 8vo, cloth, pp. xii + 329. Price, \$1.75 *net*.

**THE USE OF THE INFINITIVE INSTEAD OF A FINITE VERB IN FRENCH.** By BENJAMIN F. LUKER, Ph.D. 12mo, cloth, pp. ix + 113. Price, \$1.50 *net*.

**THE GLORIA D'AMOR OF FRA ROCABERTI.** Edited by H. C. HEATON, Ph.D. 8vo, cloth, pp. xiii + 167. Price, \$1.75 *net*.

**FRENCH CRITICISM OF AMERICAN LITERATURE BEFORE 1850.** By HAROLD ELMER MANTZ, Ph.D. 12mo, cloth, pp. ix + 165. Price, \$1.75 *net*.

**THE SPIRIT OF PROTEST IN OLD FRENCH LITERATURE.** By MARY M. WOOD, Ph.D. 8vo, cloth, pp. xii + 201. Price, \$1.75 *net*.

**THE INFLUENCE OF ITALY ON THE LITERARY CAREER OF ALPHONSE DE LAMARTINE.** By AGIDE PIRAZZINI, Ph.D. 12mo, cloth, pp. xii + 168. Price, \$1.75 *net*.

**TIRANT LO BLANCH.** A Study of its Authorship, Principal Sources and Historical Setting. By JOSEPH A. VAETH, Ph.D. 8vo, cloth, pp. xvi + 169. Price, \$2.00 *net*.

**FRENCH TERMINOLOGIES IN THE MAKING.** By HARVEY J. SWANN, Ph.D. 8vo, cloth, pp. xxii + 250. Price, \$2.25 *net*.

**NOVEL OF EXTRAORDINARY VOYAGE IN FRENCH LITERATURE BEFORE 1700.** By GEOFFROY ATKINSON, Ph.D. 8vo, cloth, pp. xiii + 189. \$2.00 *net*.

**INFINITIVE CONSTRUCTIONS IN OLD SPANISH.** By WILFRED A. BEARDSLEY, Ph.D. 8vo, cloth, pp. xiv + 279. \$2.50 *net*.

**COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY PRESS**

LEMCKE & BUECHNER, Agents, 30-32 East 20th St., New York



THE UNIVERSITY LIBRARY  
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA, SANTA CRUZ

This book is due on the last **DATE** stamped below.

~~NOT FOR~~

FEB 25 '85 M  
MAR 6 1985 REC'D

FEB 09 '85  
MAR 3 1986 REC'D

APR 15 '9  
JAN 2 1991 REC'D

50m-1,'69 (J5643a8)2373—3A,1

PC4715.B38



3 2106 00156 1908





